RANDOM WALK AND THE THEORY OF BROWNIAN MOTION*

MARK KAC,† Cornell University

1. **Introduction.** In 1827 an English botanist, Robert Brown, noticed that small particles suspended in fluids perform peculiarly erratic movements. This phenomenon, which can also be observed in gases, is referred to as Brownian motion. Although it soon became clear that Brownian motion is an outward manifestation of the molecular motion postulated by the kinetic theory of matter, it was not until 1905 that Albert Einstein first advanced a satisfactory theory.

The theory was then considerably generalized and extended by the Polish physicist Marjan Smoluchowski, and further important contributions were made by Fokker, Planck, Burger, Fürth, Ornstein, Uhlenbeck, Chandrasekhar, Kramers and others [1]. On the purely mathematical side various aspects of the theory were analyzed by Wiener, Kolomgoroff, Feller, Lévy, Doob, and Fortet [2]. Einstein considered the case of the *free* particle, that is, a particle on which no forces other than those due to the molecules of the surrounding medium are acting. His results can be briefly summarized as follows.

Consider the motion of the projection of the free particle‡ on a straight line which we shall call the x-axis. What one wants is the probability

$$\int_{x_1}^{x_2} P(x_0 \mid x; t)dx$$

that at time t the particle will be between x_1 and x_2 if it was at x_0 at time $t=0$. Einstein was then able to show that the "probability density" $P(x_0 \mid x; t)$§ must satisfy the partial differential equation

$$\frac{\partial P}{\partial t} = D\frac{\partial^2 P}{\partial x^2}, \tag{1}$$

where D is a certain physical constant. The conditions imposed on P are

$$\begin{aligned} &(a) && P \geqq 0 \\ &(b) && \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} P(x_0 \mid x; t)dx = 1 \\ &(c) && \lim_{t\to 0} P(x_0 \mid x; t) = 0, \qquad \text{for } x \neq x_0. \end{aligned} \tag{2}$$

---

* This is an extended version of an address delivered at the annual meeting of the Association at Swarthmore, Pennsylvania, December 26–27, 1946.

† John Simon Guggenheim Memorial Fellow.

‡ In what follows we shall identify this projection with the particle itself and hence consider the so-called one-dimensional Brownian motion.

§ The notation $P(x_0 \mid x; t)$ and $P(n \mid m; s)$ for conditional probabilities is that used by Wang and Uhlenbeck [1]. It does not conform with the notation adopted in the statistical literature. Had we adopted the latter notation we would write $P(x; t \mid x_0)$ and $P(m; s \mid n)$.

Conditions (*a*) and (*b*) are the usual ones imposed upon a probability density and condition (*c*) expresses the *certainty* that at $t=0$ the particle was at x_0. It is well known that (1) and (2) imply that

$$P(x_0 \mid x; t) = \frac{1}{2\sqrt{\pi D t}} e^{-(x-x_0)^2/4Dt} \tag{3}$$

and that the solution (3) is unique.

The greatness of Einstein's contribution was not, however, solely due to the derivation of (1), and hence (3). From the point of view of physical applications it was equally, or perhaps even more, important that he was able to show that

$$D = \frac{2RT}{Nf}, \tag{4}$$

where R is the universal gas constant, T the absolute temperature, N the Avogadro number, and f the friction coefficient. The friction coefficient f, in the case the medium is a liquid or a gas at ordinary pressure, can in turn be expressed in terms of viscosity and the size of the particle [3].

It was relation (4) that made possible the determination of the Avogadro number from Brownian motion experiments, an achievement for which Perrin was awarded the Nobel prize in 1926. However, the derivation of (4) belongs to physics proper, and presents no particular mathematical interest; we shall therefore not be concerned with it in the sequel.

As soon as the theory for the free particle was established, a natural question arose as to how it should be modified in order to take into account outside forces as, for example, gravity. Assuming that the outside force acts in the direction of the x-axis and is given by an expression $F(x)$, Smoluchowski has shown that (1) should in this case be replaced by

$$\frac{\partial P}{\partial t} = -\frac{1}{f}\frac{\partial}{\partial x}(PF) + D\frac{\partial^2 P}{\partial x^2}. \tag{5}$$

Two cases of special interest and importance are:

$F(x) = -a$; field of constant force (for example, gravity).

$F(x) = -bx$; elastically bound particle (for example, small pendulum).

At this point it must be strongly emphasized that theories based on (1) and (5) are only approximate. They are valid only for relatively large t and, in the case of an elastically bound particle, only in the overdamped case, that is, when the friction coefficient is sufficiently large. These limitations of the theory were already recognized by Einstein and Smoluchowski but are often disregarded by writers who stress that in Brownian motion the velocity of the particle is infinite. This paradoxical conclusion is a result of stretching the theory beyond the bounds of its applicability. An improved theory (known as "exact") was advanced by Uhlenbeck and Ornstein and by Kramers. The Uhlenbeck-Orn-

stein approach was further elaborated by Chandrasekhar and Doob.

In what follows we shall be concerned with a discrete approach to the Einstein-Smoluchowski (approximate) theory. This approach was first suggested by Smoluchowski himself; it consists in treating Brownian motion as a discrete random walk. Smoluchowski used this approach only in connection with a free particle but we shall also treat other classical cases. Moreover, a re-interpretation of one of the discrete models will allow us to discuss the important question of recurrence and irreversibility in thermodynamics.

The main advantages of a discrete approach are pedagogical, inasmuch as one is able to circumvent various conceptual difficulties inherent to the continuous approach. It is also not without a purely scientific interest and it is hoped that it may suggest various generalizations which will contribute to the development of the Calculus of Probability.

2. **The free particle.** Imagine a particle which moves along the x-axis in such a way that in each step it can move either Δ to the right or Δ to the left, the duration of each step being τ. The fact that we are dealing with a free particle is interpreted by assuming that the probabilities of moving to the right or to the left are equal, and hence each equal $\frac{1}{2}$. Instead of $P(x_0 | x; t)$ we now consider $P(n\Delta | m\Delta; s\tau) = P(n | m; s)$ which is the probability that the particle is at $m\Delta$ at time $s\tau$, if at the beginning it was at $n\Delta$. Noticing that $P(n | m; s)$ is also the probability that after s games of "heads or tails" the gain of a player is $\nu = m - n$, we can write

$$(6)\quad P(n \mid m; s) = \begin{cases} \dfrac{1}{2^s} \dfrac{s!}{\left(\dfrac{s+|\nu|}{2}\right)!\left(\dfrac{s-|\nu|}{2}\right)!} & \text{if } |\nu| \leqq s \text{ and } |\nu| + s \text{ is even,} \\ 0 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

Suppose now that Δ and τ approach 0 in such a way that

$$(7)\qquad \frac{\Delta^2}{2\tau} = D, \qquad n\Delta \to x_0, \qquad s\tau = t.$$

It then follows from the classical Laplace-De Moivre theorem [4] that

$$(8)\qquad \lim \sum_{x_1 < m\Delta < x_2} P(n \mid m; s) = \frac{1}{2\sqrt{\pi D t}} \int_{x_1}^{x_2} e^{-(x-x_0)^2/4Dt} dx,$$

and hence the fundamental result of Einstein emerges as a consequence of what in probability theory we call a "limit theorem."

It is both important and instructive to point out a striking formal connection between the discrete (random walk) and the continuous (Einstein) approaches. We notice that $P(n | m; s)$ satisfies the difference equation

$$(9)\qquad P(n \mid m; s+1) = \tfrac{1}{2} P(n \mid m-1; s) + \tfrac{1}{2} P(n \mid m+1; s),$$

which we write in the equivalent form

$$\frac{P(n\Delta \mid m\Delta;\,(s+1)\tau) - P(n\Delta \mid m\Delta;\,s\tau)}{\tau} = \frac{\Delta^2}{2\tau}\left\{\frac{P(n\Delta \mid (m+1)\Delta;\,s\tau) - 2P(n\Delta \mid m\Delta;\,s\tau) + P(n\Delta \mid (m-1)\Delta;\,s\tau)}{\Delta^2}\right\}. \tag{10}$$

In the limit (7) this difference equation goes over formally into the differential equation

$$\frac{\partial P}{\partial t} = D\frac{\partial^2 P}{\partial x^2}, \tag{11}$$

which as noted before was the basis of Einstein's theory. This formal connection between the two approaches can be made rigorous, but we shall not go into this. However, we shall use it as a guiding heuristic principle in constructing models of Brownian motion when outside forces are taken into account.

Finally, let us mention that it is the relation

$$\frac{\Delta^2}{2\tau} = D,$$

which is responsible for the conclusion that the velocity of a Brownian particle is infinite. In fact, in our model, the ratio Δ/τ plays the role of the instantaneous velocity and it obviously approaches infinity as $\Delta \to 0$.

3. **Particle in a field of constant force and in the presence of a reflecting barrier.** We again consider random walk along the x-axis in which a particle can move Δ to the right or Δ to the left, the duration of each step being τ. We now introduce the following new assumptions:

(a) The probability of a move to the right is $q = \frac{1}{2} - \beta\Delta$, and consequently the probability of a move to the left is $p = \frac{1}{2} + \beta\Delta$. Here β is a certain physical constant, and Δ must be chosen sufficiently small so that $q > 0$.

(b) When the particle reaches the point $x = 0$ (*reflecting barrier*) it must, in the next step, move Δ to the right.

Without the assumption (b) the problem would be quite simple and of no great physical interest. In actual experiments with heavy Brownian particles, like those of Perrin, the bottom of the container acts as a reflecting barrier and the elucidation of its influence on the Brownian motion is of considerable theoretical interest.

This problem has been solved by Smoluchowski, on the basis of his equation (5) but we shall show that one can solve the discrete problem and obtain Smoluchowski's result by passing to a limit.

Assuming that the particle starts from $n\Delta \geqq 0$ (n an integer) we seek an explicit expression for $P(n \mid m;\, s)$. We first notice that $P(n \mid m;\, s)$ satisfies, for

$m \geqq 2$, the difference equation

$$P(n \mid m; s+1) = qP(n \mid m-1; s) + pP(n \mid m+1; s), \tag{12}$$

and that for $m=1$ and $m=0$ we have

$$P(n \mid 1; s+1) = P(n \mid 0; s) + pP(n \mid 2; s), \tag{12a}$$

$$P(n \mid 0; s+1) = pP(n \mid 1; s). \tag{12b}$$

We also have the initial condition

$$P(n \mid m; 0) = \delta(m, n), \tag{13}$$

where $\delta(m, n)$ denotes, as usual, the Kronecker delta.

The difference equation (12) when rewritten in the form analogous to (10) can be shown to go over formally (in the limit $\Delta \to 0$, $\tau \to 0$, $\Delta^2/2\tau = D$, $n\Delta \to x_0$, $m\Delta \to x$, $s\tau = t$) into the differential equation

$$\frac{\partial P}{\partial t} = D\frac{\partial^2 P}{\partial x^2} + 4\beta D\frac{\partial P}{\partial x}, \tag{14}$$

which is of the form (5) with $F(x) = -a = -4\beta Df$.

To find $P(n \mid m; s)$ we use a method which is basic in the study of the so-called Markoff chains, of which our problem is but a particular example, and which in its essentials goes back to Poincaré [5]. Let $(p)_s$ be the (infinite) vector

$$(p)_s = \begin{bmatrix} P(n \mid 0; s) \\ P(n \mid 1; s) \\ P(n \mid 2; s) \\ \vdots \end{bmatrix} \tag{15}$$

and A the infinite matrix

$$A = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & p & 0 & 0 & 0 \cdots \\ 1 & 0 & p & 0 & 0 \cdots \\ 0 & q & 0 & p & 0 \cdots \\ 0 & 0 & q & 0 & p \cdots \\ \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot & \cdot \cdot \cdot \end{pmatrix}. \tag{16}$$

Then, the difference equation (12), (12a) and (12b), can be written in the matrix form as

$$(p)_{s+1} = A(p)_s. \tag{17}$$

Thus it follows immediately that

$$(p)_s = A^s(p)_0, \tag{18}$$

where $(p)_0$ is the vector

$$(p)_0 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 \\ \cdot \\ \cdot \\ \cdot \\ 0 \\ 1 \\ 0 \\ \cdot \\ \cdot \\ \cdot \end{pmatrix},$$

1 being the nth component, the components being numbered from zero on. Interpreting (18), we see that

$$P(n \mid m; s) = \text{the } (m, n) \text{ element of } A^s. \tag{19}$$

To make use of (19), we notice that if $R > n+s$ and we consider the finite matrix A_R, which is the upper left R by R submatrix of A, then for $m < R$

$$\text{the } (m, n) \text{ element of } A^s = \text{the } (m, n) \text{ element of } A_R^s, \tag{20}$$

or equivalently,

$$\text{the } (m, n) \text{ element of } A^s = \lim_{R \to \infty} \text{of the } (m, n) \text{ element of } A_R^s. \tag{21}$$

For each R there exist matrices P_R and Q_R such that

$$P_R Q_R = I \tag{22}$$

and

$$A_R = P_R \begin{bmatrix} \lambda_0(R) & & & 0 \\ & \lambda_1(R) & & \\ & & \ddots & \\ 0 & & & \lambda_{R-1}(R) \end{bmatrix} Q_R, \tag{23}$$

$\lambda_0(R), \lambda_1(R), \cdots, \lambda_{R-1}(R)$ being the eigenvalues of the matrix A_R. To simplify the notation we write λ_j for $\lambda_j(R)$.

Multiplying the matrix A_R s times by itself and making use of (22), we obtain

$$A_R^s = P_R \begin{bmatrix} \lambda_0^s & & & 0 \\ & \lambda_1^s & & \\ & & \ddots & \\ 0 & & & \lambda_{R-1}^s \end{bmatrix} Q_R \tag{24}$$

and one can calculate the (m, n) element of A_R^s explicitly provided the diag-

onalization (23) can be performed explicitly. This indeed is the case.

Let $(x)_0, (x)_1, \cdots, (x)_{R-1}$ be the "right" and $(y)_0, (y)_1, \cdots, (y)_{R-1}$ the "left" eigenvectors belonging respectively to the eigenvalues $\lambda_0, \lambda_1, \cdots, \lambda_{R-1}$. In other words, for $k=0, 1, \cdots, R-1$, we have

$$A_R(x)_k = \lambda_k(x)_k,$$
$$A_R'(y)_k = \lambda_k(y)_k,$$

where A_R' is the transpose of A_R.

Suppose furthermore that the vectors can be so normalized that

$$(x)_k \cdot (y)_k = 1, \qquad k = 0, 1, \cdots, R-1, \tag{25}$$

where $(x)_k \cdot (y)_k$ is the inner (dot) product of the vectors. Since it is well known that

$$(x)_j \cdot (y)_k = 0 \qquad \text{for } \lambda_j \neq \lambda_k$$

we see that, in the case when all the eigenvalues are distinct, we can take as P_R the matrix whose columns are the vectors $(x)_k$ and for Q_R the matrix whose rows are the vectors $(y)_k$.

In order to determine the eigenvalues and the right eigenvectors we consider the system of linear equations

$$\begin{aligned} px_1 &= \lambda x_0 \\ x_0 + px_2 &= \lambda x_1 \\ qx_1 + px_3 &= \lambda x_2 \\ &\cdots\cdots\cdots \\ qx_{R-2} &= \lambda x_{R-1}, \end{aligned} \tag{26}$$

and the extended infinite system

$$\begin{aligned} px_1 &= \lambda x_0 \\ x_0 + px_2 &= \lambda x_1 \\ &\cdots\cdots\cdots \\ qx_{R-1} + px_{R+1} &= \lambda x_R \\ &\cdots\cdots\cdots. \end{aligned} \tag{27}$$

If we can find non-trivial solutions of (27), for which

$$x_R = 0, \tag{28}$$

we will have found solutions of (26).

It turns out that (28) will yield an equation in λ which has R distinct roots and thus our procedure gives us all eigenvalues, and consequently all right eigenvectors. Multiplying the members of the equations of (27) by 1,

$z, z^2, \ldots$, and adding, we obtain formally

$$x_0 z + q\sum_1^\infty x_k z^{k+1} + p\sum_1^\infty x_k z^{k-1} = \lambda \sum_0^\infty x_k z^k$$

or, upon introducing the abbreviation,

$$f(z) = \sum_0^\infty x_k z^k, \tag{29}$$

we have

$$x_0 z + qz[f(z) - x_0] + \frac{p}{z}[f(z) - x_0] = \lambda f(z). \tag{30}$$

From (30) we obtain

$$f(z) = \frac{p}{q} x_0 \left\{ -1 + \frac{1 - \lambda z}{qz^2 - \lambda z + p} \right\}, \tag{31}$$

and since this function is analytic in the neighborhood of zero the formal procedure used above can be justified.

Let ρ_1 and ρ_2 be the *reciprocals* of the roots of

$$qz^2 - \lambda z + p = 0. \tag{32}$$

We have then

$$f(z) = \frac{p}{q} x_0 \left\{ -1 + \frac{1 - \lambda z}{p(1 - \rho_1 z)(1 - \rho_2 z)} \right\}, \tag{33}$$

and introducing partial fractions,

$$\frac{1 - \lambda z}{p(1 - \rho_1 z)(1 - \rho_2 z)} = \frac{1}{p} \frac{\lambda - \rho_1}{\rho_2 - \rho_1} \frac{1}{1 - \rho_1 z} + \frac{1}{p} \frac{\rho_2 - \lambda}{\rho_2 - \rho_1} \frac{1}{1 - \rho_2 z}. \tag{34}$$

Thus

$$x_k = \frac{x_0}{q}\left(\frac{\lambda - \rho_1}{\rho_2 - \rho_1} \rho_1^k + \frac{\rho_2 - \lambda}{\rho_2 - \rho_1} \rho_2^k \right) \qquad \text{for } k \geqq 1, \tag{35}$$

and, in particular, the equation $x_R = 0$ assumes the form

$$\frac{\lambda - \rho_1}{\rho_2 - \rho_1} \rho_1^R + \frac{\rho_2 - \lambda}{\rho_2 - \rho_1} \rho_2^R = 0. \tag{36}$$

Equation (36) must now be solved for λ. Assuming R to be even, and seeking solutions in the form

$$\lambda = 2\sqrt{pq} \cos \Theta, \qquad 0 \leqq \Theta \leqq \pi,$$

we are led to the equation

$$\frac{\tan R\Theta}{\tan \Theta} = \frac{1}{2p-1}.$$

For $R>(2p-1)^{-1}$ this equation is seen to have $R-2$ distinct roots, $\Theta_1, \Theta_2, \cdots, \Theta_{R-2}$, which lie in the subintervals

$$\left(\frac{j\pi}{R} - \frac{\pi}{2R}, \ \frac{j\pi}{R} + \frac{\pi}{2R}\right),$$

where j ranges through the integers from 1 to $R-1$ with the exception of $j=R/2$. Corresponding to $\Theta_1, \Theta_2, \cdots, \Theta_{R-2}$ we have $R-2$ distinct eigenvalues,

$$\lambda_k = 2\sqrt{pq}\cos\Theta_k, \qquad k = 1, 2, \cdots, R-2,$$

and the components of the right eigenvector belonging to λ_k can be written in the form

$$x_k^{(m)} = a_k\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)_*^{m/2}\left(\cos m\Theta_k - 2\beta\Delta\frac{\sin m\Theta_k}{\sin\Theta_k}\right),$$

where

$$\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)_*^{\mu} = \begin{cases} \left(\dfrac{q}{p}\right)^{\mu} & \text{if } \mu > 0, \\ q & \text{if } \mu = 0, \end{cases}$$

and a_k is a normalizing constant which will be fixed later. For sufficiently large R the remaining eigenvalues λ_0 and λ_{R-1} can be shown to be given by the formulas

$$\lambda_0 = 2\sqrt{pq}\cosh\theta_0, \qquad \lambda_{R-1} = -\lambda_0,$$

where θ_0 is the only positive root of the equation

$$\frac{\tanh R\theta}{\tanh\theta} = \frac{1}{2p-1}.$$

The components of the corresponding right eigenvectors are given by the expressions

$$x_0^{(m)} = a_0\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)_*^{m/2}\left(\cosh m\theta_0 - 2\beta\Delta\frac{\sinh m\theta_0}{\sinh\theta_0}\right)$$

$$x_{R-1}^{(m)} = a_{R-1}(-1)^m\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)_*^{m/2}\left(\cosh m\theta_0 - 2\beta\Delta\frac{\sinh m\theta_0}{\sinh\theta_0}\right).$$

It remains now to find the left eigenvectors. This can be accomplished in exactly the same manner and we merely quote the results. We obtain

$$y_k^{(m)} = b_k\left(\frac{p}{q}\right)^{m/2}\left(\cos m\Theta_k - 2\beta\Delta\frac{\sin m\Theta_k}{\sin\Theta_k}\right)$$

for $m=0, 1, \cdots, R-1$; $k=1, 2, \cdots, R-2$, and

$$y_0^{(m)} = b_0\left(\frac{p}{q}\right)^{m/2}\left(\cosh m\theta_0 - 2\beta\Delta\frac{\sinh m\theta_0}{\sinh\theta_0}\right)$$

$$y_{R-1}^{(m)} = b_{R-1}(-1)^m\left(\frac{p}{q}\right)^{m/2}\left(\cosh m\theta_0 - 2\beta\Delta\frac{\sinh m\theta_0}{\sinh\theta_0}\right).$$

To satisfy the normalization conditions (25) we must have

$$a_k b_k\left(q + \sum_{m=1}^{R-1} f_m^2(\Theta_k)\right) = 1, \qquad k = 1, 2, \cdots, R-2, \tag{37}$$

$$a_k b_k\left(q + \sum_{m=1}^{R-1} F_m^2(\theta_0)\right) = 1, \qquad k = 0, R-1, \tag{38}$$

where

$$f_m(\Theta) = \cos m\Theta - 2\beta\Delta\frac{\sin m\Theta}{\sin\Theta}$$

and

$$F_m(\theta) = \cosh m\theta - 2\beta\Delta\frac{\sinh m\theta}{\sinh\theta}.$$

We can, of course, put $a_0=a_1=\cdots=a_{R-1}=1$, and determine the b's from (37) and (38). Referring back to (19), (20), and (24), and recalling that columns of P_R are the right eigenvectors $(x)_k$, and the rows of Q_R are the left eigenvectors $(y)_k$, we obtain

$$P(n \mid m; s) = \sum_{k=0}^{R-1} \lambda_k^s x_k^{(m)} y_k^{(n)}, \tag{39}$$

or, more explicitly,

$$\begin{aligned} P(n \mid m; s) = {} & b_0(2\sqrt{pq}\cosh\theta_0)^s\left(\frac{p}{q}\right)^{n/2}\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)_*^{m/2} F_m(\theta_0)F_n(\theta_0)\left[1+(-1)^{m+n+s}\right] \\ & + \left(\frac{p}{q}\right)^{n/2}\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)_*^{m/2}(2\sqrt{pq})^s \sum_{k=1}^{R-2} b_k \cos^s\Theta_k f_m(\Theta_k) f_n(\Theta_k). \end{aligned} \tag{40}$$

Making use of (21), we can achieve considerable simplification by letting $R\to\infty$. In fact, it can be shown that

$$P(n \mid m; s) = \frac{p-q}{2pq}\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)_*^m\left[1+(-1)^{m+n+s}\right] \tag{41}$$

$$+\frac{2}{\pi}\left(\frac{p}{q}\right)^{n/2}\left(\frac{q}{p}\right)^{m/2}_{*}(2\sqrt{pq})^{s}\int_0^{\pi}\cos^s\Theta\frac{\tan^2\Theta}{(p-q)^2+\tan^2\Theta}f_n(\Theta)f_m(\Theta)d\Theta.$$

Although in various places we have tacitly assumed that p and q are different from $\frac{1}{2}$, the final formula (41) can easily be seen to be valid also for the case $p=q=\frac{1}{2}$. In this case (free particle in the presence of a reflecting barrier) the formula assumes the remarkably simple form

$$P(n\,|\,m;\,s)=\frac{2}{\pi}\,(1)^{m/2}_{*}\int_0^{\pi}\cos^s\Theta\cos m\Theta\cos n\Theta d\Theta, \tag{42}$$

and the right member can be expressed in terms of binomial coefficients. This formula can also be derived in a much simpler way using, for instance, the classical method of images.

In the limit

$$\Delta\to 0,\qquad \tau\to 0,\qquad \frac{\Delta^2}{2\tau}=D,\qquad n\Delta\to x_0,\qquad s\tau=t,$$

one can show that

$$\lim\sum_{x_1<m\Delta<x_2}P(n\,|\,m;\,s)=\int_{x_1}^{x_2}P(x_0\,|\,x;\,t)dx,$$

where

$$P(x_0\,|\,x;\,t)=4\beta e^{-4\beta x}+e^{-2\beta(x-x_0)}e^{-4\beta^2Dt}\frac{2}{\pi}\int_0^{\infty}e^{-Dy^2t}\frac{y^2}{4\beta^2+y^2}g(x,y)g(x_0,y)dy, \tag{43}$$

and

$$g(x,\,y)=\cos xy-2\beta(\sin xy)/y.$$

The proof of this theorem is not elementary inasmuch as it utilizes the so called "continuity theorem for Fourier-Stieltjes transforms" [6]. Formula (43) can be shown to be equivalent with Smoluchowski's formula given in [1].

4. **An elastically bound particle.** Again the particle can move either Δ to the right or Δ to the left, and the duration of each step is τ. However, the probability of moving in either direction depends on the position of the particle. More precisely, if the particle is at $k\Delta$ the probabilities of moving right or left are

$$\frac{1}{2}\left(1-\frac{k}{R}\right)\quad\text{or}\quad\frac{1}{2}\left(1+\frac{k}{R}\right),$$

respectively. R is a certain integer, and possible positions of the particle are limited by the condition $-R\leqq k\leqq R$. The basic probabilities $P(n\,|\,m;\,s)$ now satisfy the difference equation

$$(44)\quad P(n\,|\,m;\,s+1)=\frac{R+m+1}{2R}P(n\,|\,m+1;\,s)+\frac{R-m+1}{2R}P(n\,|\,m-1;\,s),$$

which must be solved with the initial condition

$$(45)\qquad P(n\,|\,m;\,0)=\delta(m,\,n).$$

In the limit

$$\Delta\to 0,\qquad \tau\to 0,\qquad R\to\infty,\qquad \frac{\Delta^2}{2\tau}=D,\qquad \frac{1}{R\tau}\to\gamma,$$

$$s\tau=t,\qquad n\Delta\to x_0,\qquad m\Delta\to x,$$

the difference equation (44) is seen to go over formally into the differential equation

$$(46)\qquad \frac{\partial P}{\partial t}=\gamma\frac{\partial(xP)}{\partial x}+D\frac{\partial^2 P}{\partial x^2}$$

which is Smoluchowski's equation (5) with $F(x)=-x/\gamma f$.

The discrete problem in a different form and in a different connection was first proposed and discussed by P. and T. Ehrenfest in 1907 [7]. In the next section we shall discuss their original formulation. A fairly detailed treatment was given by Schrödinger and Kohlrausch in 1926 [8] and a brief exposition can be found in the review article of Wang and Uhlenbeck [1]. It seems that Schrödinger and Kohlrausch were the first to point out the connection between the Ehrenfest model and Brownian motion of an elastically bound particle. However, an explicit solution of (44) with the initial condition (45) was apparently not known. I have recently found such a solution using the matrix method described in Section 3 [9]. Instead of the infinite matrix of that section we must now consider the finite matrix

$$(47)\qquad B=\begin{pmatrix} 0 & \frac{1}{2R} & 0 & 0 & 0\cdots 0\\ 1 & 0 & \frac{2}{2R} & 0 & 0\cdots 0\\ 0 & 1-\frac{1}{2R} & 0 & \frac{3}{2R} & 0\cdots 0\\ \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots\\ 0 & 0 & \cdots & \frac{1}{2R} & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

and the problem is again reduced to finding the eigenvalues $\lambda_{-R}, \lambda_{-R+1}, \cdots, \lambda_0, \cdots, \lambda_{R-1}, \lambda_R$ of B and matrices P and Q such that

$$PQ = I \tag{48}$$

and

$$B = P \begin{pmatrix} \lambda_{-R} & & & & \\ & \lambda_{-R+1} & & 0 & \\ & & \cdot & & \\ & & & \cdot & \\ & 0 & & \lambda_{R-1} & \\ & & & & \lambda_R \end{pmatrix} Q. \tag{49}$$

As before, $P(n \mid m; s)$ is the (m, n) element of B^s, where

$$B^s = P \begin{pmatrix} \lambda_{-R}^s & & & & \\ & \lambda_{-R+1}^s & & 0 & \\ & & \cdot & & \\ & & & \cdot & \\ & 0 & & \lambda_{R-1}^s & \\ & & & & \lambda_R^s \end{pmatrix} Q. \tag{50}$$

In order to perform the diagonalization (49) explicitly we start (following the procedure of Section 3) by trying to find the eigenvalues and the right eigenvectors of B. For this purpose we consider the system of linear equations

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{2R} x_1 &= \lambda x_0 \\ x_0 + \frac{2}{2R} x_2 &= \lambda x_1 \\ \left(1 - \frac{1}{2R}\right) x_1 + \frac{3}{2R} x_3 &= \lambda x_2 \\ \cdots\cdots\cdots\cdots\cdots\cdots & \\ \frac{1}{2R} x_{2R-1} &= \lambda x_{2R}, \end{aligned} \tag{51}$$

and the auxiliary infinite system

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{2R} x_1 &= \lambda x_0 \\ x_0 + \frac{2}{2R} x_2 &= \lambda x_1 \\ \left(1 - \frac{1}{2R}\right) x_1 + \frac{3}{2R} x_3 &= \lambda x_2 \\ \cdots\cdots\cdots\cdots\cdots\cdots & \end{aligned} \tag{52}$$

$$\frac{1}{2R}x_{2R-1} + \frac{2R+1}{2R}x_{2R+1} = \lambda x_{2R}$$

$$\frac{2R+2}{2R}x_{2R+2} = \lambda x_{2R+1}$$

. . . . . .

If we can find non-trivial solutions of (52) for which

$$x_{2R+1} = 0 \tag{53}$$

we will have found solutions of (51). It will turn out that this procedure will again yield all eigenvalues and right eigenvectors. Multiplying the members of the equations of (52) by $1, z, z^2, \cdots$, and adding, we obtain formally

$$\sum_{k=0}^{\infty}\left(1 - \frac{k}{2R}\right)x_k z^{k+1} + \sum_{k=0}^{\infty}\frac{k}{2R}x_k z^{k-1} = \lambda\sum_{k=0}^{\infty}x_k z^k,$$

or, introducing the abbreviation

$$f(z) = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty}x_k z^k,$$

$$zf(z) - \frac{z^2}{2R}f'(z) + \frac{1}{2R}f'(z) = \lambda f(z).$$

We thus get the differential equation

$$f'(z) = 2R\frac{\lambda - z}{1 - z^2}f(z), \tag{54}$$

whose solution satisfying $f(0) = x_0$ is easily found to be

$$f(z) = x_0(1 - z)^{R(1-\lambda)}(1 + z)^{R(1+\lambda)}. \tag{55}$$

Since $f(z)$ is analytic in the neighborhood of $z = 0$ the formal procedure can be justified.

We now notice that if

$$\lambda = \frac{j}{R}, \qquad j = -R, -R+1, \cdots, 0, \cdots, R-1, R, \tag{56}$$

$f(z)$ is a polynomial of degree $2R$, and hence $x_{2R+1} = 0$. The numbers (56) are thus seen to be eigenvalues of B and, since there are $2R+1$ of them, we see that we have found *all* the eigenvalues. It also follows that the components of the right eigenvector belonging to the eigenvalue $\lambda_j = j/R$ can be taken as

$$C_0^{(j)} = 1, C_1^{(j)}, C_2^{(j)}, \cdots, C_{2R}^{(j)},$$

where the C's are defined by the identity

$$(1-z)^{R-j}(1+z)^{R+j} \equiv \sum_{k=0}^{2R} C_k^{(j)} z^k. \tag{57}$$

So far we have followed very closely the procedure described in Section 3. Surprisingly enough, we encounter unexpected difficulties in trying to carry out the analogy still further and determine by similar means the left eigenvectors.

To find the matrix Q we resort to a different method. Let us first recall that P can be taken as the matrix whose jth column (for convenience columns and rows are numbered from $-R$ to R) is

$$\begin{matrix} 1 \\ C_1^{(j)} \\ C_2^{(j)} \\ \cdot \\ \cdot \\ C_{2R}^{(j)}. \end{matrix}$$

Matrix Q must satisfy the equation

$$P'Q' = I,$$

which is an immediate consequence of the equation $PQ=I$, and hence denoting by $\alpha_{-R}, \cdots, \alpha_0, \cdots, \alpha_R$, the consecutive elements of the jth column of Q', we must have

$$\sum_{k=-R}^{R} C_{R+r}^{(k)} \alpha_k = \delta(j, r), \qquad r = -R, \cdots, R. \tag{58}$$

From (58) it follows that

$$z^{R+j} = \sum_{r=-R}^{R} \delta(j, r) z^{R+r} = \sum_{r=-R}^{R} z^{R+r} \sum_{k=-R}^{R} C_{R+r}^{(k)} \alpha_k = \sum_{k=-R}^{R} \alpha_k \sum_{r=-R}^{R} C_{R+r}^{(k)} z^{R+r}$$

$$= \sum_{k=-R}^{R} \alpha_k \sum_{s=0}^{2R} C_s^{(k)} z^s,$$

or, by virtue of (57),

$$z^{R+j} = \sum_{k=-R}^{R} \alpha_k (1-z)^{R-k}(1+z)^{R+k} = (1-z)^{2R} \sum_{l=0}^{2R} \alpha_{l-R} \left(\frac{1+z}{1-z}\right)^l.$$

Thus

$$\frac{z^{R+j}}{(1-z)^{2R}} = \sum_{l=0}^{2R} \alpha_{l-R} \left(\frac{1+z}{1-z}\right)^l. \tag{59}$$

Let

$$\zeta = \frac{1+z}{1-z},$$

so that

$$z = -\frac{1-\zeta}{1+\zeta} \quad \text{and} \quad 1-z = \frac{2}{1+\zeta}.$$

In terms of ζ (59) assumes the form

$$\frac{(-1)^{R+j}}{2^{2R}}(1-\zeta)^{R+j}(1+\zeta)^{R-j} = \sum_{l=0}^{2R} \alpha_{l-R}\zeta^l, \tag{60}$$

and since by (57)

$$(1-\zeta)^{R+j}(1+\zeta)^{R-j} = \sum_{l=0}^{2R} C_l^{(-j)}\zeta^l,$$

we obtain, by comparing coefficients of corresponding powers of ζ,

$$\alpha_{l-R} = \frac{(-1)^{R+j}}{2^{2R}} C_l^{(-j)},$$

or finally,

$$\alpha_s = \frac{(-1)^{R+j}}{2^{2R}} C_{R+s}^{(-j)}. \tag{61}$$

Formula (61) determines explicitly the elements of Q' (and hence of Q), and it is now possible to write an explicit expression for $P(n \mid m; s)$. In fact, making use of (50), we obtain

$$P(n \mid m; s) = \frac{(-1)^{R+n}}{2^{2R}} \sum_{j=-R}^{R} \left(\frac{j}{R}\right)^s C_{R+j}^{(-n)} C_{R+m}^{(j)}. \tag{62}$$

In the limit

$$\Delta \to 0, \qquad \tau \to 0, \qquad \frac{\Delta^2}{2\tau} = D, \qquad \frac{1}{R\tau} \to \gamma, \qquad s\tau = t, \qquad n\Delta \to x_0,$$

we have

$$\lim \sum_{x_1 < m\Delta < x_2} P(n \mid m; s) = \int_{x_1}^{x_2} P(x_0 \mid x; t)\,dx,$$

where

$$P(x_0 \mid x; t) = \frac{\sqrt{\gamma}}{\sqrt{2\pi D(1-e^{-2\gamma t})}} e^{-\gamma(x-x_0e^{-\gamma t})^2/2\gamma(1-e^{-2\gamma t})}. \tag{63}$$

The proof is again made to depend on the continuity theorm for Fourier-Stieltjes transforms.

The frequency function (63) was first discovered by Lord Raleigh [10]. Its connection with Brownian motion of an elastically bound particle, in the strongly overdamped case, was established by Smoluchowski who arrived at it quite independently.

5. **The Ehrenfest model. Irreversibility and recurrence.** Imagine $2R$ balls numbered consecutively from 1 to $2R$, distributed in two boxes (I and II) so that at the beginning there are $R+n$, $-R \leqq n \leqq R$, balls in box I. We chose at random an integer between 1 and $2R$ (all these integers are assumed to be equiprobable) and move the ball, whose number has been drawn from the box in which it is, to the other box. This process is then repeated s times and we ask for the probability $Q(R+n \mid R+m;\ s)$ that after s drawings there should be $R+m$ balls in box I.

A moment's reflection will persuade one that this formulation (originally proposed by P. and T. Ehrenfest) [7] is equivalent to the random walk formulation of Section 4, if one interprets the excess over R of balls in box I as the displacement of the particle ($\Delta = 1$). Thus

$$Q(R+n \mid R+m;\ ) = P(n \mid m;\ s),$$

where $P(n \mid m;\ s)$ has the meaning of Section 4.

In the present formulation we have a simple and convenient model of heat exchange between two isolated bodies of unequal temperatures. The temperatures are symbolized by the numbers of balls in the boxes and the heat exchange is not an orderly process, as in classical thermodynamics, but a random one like in the kinetic theory of matter. The realistic value of the model is greatly enhanced by the fact that the average excess over R of the number of balls in box I, namely, the quantity

$$\sum_{m=-R}^{R} mP(n \mid m;\ s)$$

can easily be shown to be equal to

$$n\left(1 - \frac{1}{R}\right)^{s} \tag{64}$$

which in the limit $R \to \infty$, $1/R\tau \to \gamma$, $s\tau = t$, gives

$$ne^{-\gamma t},$$

or the Newton law of cooling.

There are several proofs of (64) [11]. The most straightforward one, which is not however the simplest, is based on formula (62).

The Ehrenfest model is also particularly suited for the discussion of a famous paradox which at the turn of this century nearly wrecked Boltzmann's inspired

efforts to explain thermodynamics on the basis of kinetic theory. In classical thermodynamics the process of heat exchange of two isolated bodies of unequal temperatures is irreversible. On the other hand, if the bodies are treated as a dynamical system the famed "Wiederkehrsatz" of Poincaré asserts that "almost every" state (except for a set of states which, when interpreted as points in phase space, form a set of Lebesgue measure 0) of the system will be, to an arbitrarily prescribed degree of accuracy, again approximately achieved. Thus, argued Zermelo, the irreversibility postulated in thermodynamics and the "recurrence" properties of dynamical systems are irreconcilable. Boltzmann then replied that the "Poincaré cycles" (time intervals after which states "nearly recur" for the first time,—the word "nearly" requiring further specification) are so long compared to time intervals involved in ordinary experiences that predictions based on classical thermodynamics can be fully trusted. This explanation, though correct in principle, was set forth in a manner which was not quite convincing and the controversy raged on. It was mainly through the efforts of Ehrenfest and Smoluchowski that the situation became completely clarified, and the irreversibility interpreted in a proper statistical manner.

It will now be easy to discuss this explanation by appealing to the Ehrenfest model. Let $P'(n|m; s)$ denote the probability that after s drawings (the duration of each drawing is τ) $R+m$ balls will be observed *for the first time* in box I if there were $R+n$ balls in that box at the beginning. In particular, $P'(n|n; s)$ is the probability that the recurrence time of the state "n" (defined by the presence of $R+n$ balls in box I) is $s\tau$. One can then show that

$$\sum_{s=1}^{\infty} P'(n|n; s) = 1, \tag{65}$$

or, in other words: *each state is bound to recur with probability 1.* This is the statistical analogue of the "Wiederkehrsatz." One can show furthermore that the mean recurrence time, namely, the quantity

$$\theta_n = \sum_{s=1}^{\infty} s\tau P'(n|n; s)$$

is equal to

$$\tau \frac{(R+n)!(R-n)!}{(2R)!} 2^{2R}. \tag{66}$$

This is the statistical analogue of a "Poincaré cycle," and it tells us, roughly speaking, how long, on the average, one will have to wait for the state "n" to recur.

If $R+n$ and $R-n$ differ considerably, θ_n is enormous. For example, if $R=10000$, $n=10000$, $\tau=1$ second, we get

$$\theta = 2^{20000} \text{ seconds (of the order of } 10^{6000} \text{ years!}).$$

If on the other hand, $R+n$ and $R-n$ are nearly equal, θ_n is quite short. If in the above example we set $n=0$ we get (using Stirling's formula)

$$\theta \sim 100\sqrt{\pi} \text{ seconds} \sim 175 \text{ seconds}.$$

It was Smoluchowski who advanced the rule [12] that if one starts in a state with a long recurrence time the process will appear as irreversible. In our example if one starts with 20000 balls in one box and none in the other, one should observe, for a long time, an essentially irreversible flow of balls. On the other hand, if the mean recurrence time is short, there is no sense to speak about irreversibility.

We now give the proofs of (65) and (66). We shall base our considerations on a formula which Professor Uhlenbeck used for similar purposes in some of his unpublished notes. The formula in question is:

$$P(n \mid m; s) = P'(n \mid m; s) + \sum_{k=1}^{s-1} P'(n \mid m; k)P(m \mid m; s-k). \tag{67}$$

To convince oneself of the validity of this formula we divide all possible ways of reaching "m" from "n" in s steps into classes according to when "m" has been reached for the first time. We then observe that starting from "n" one can reach "m" in s steps in the following s mutually exclusive ways:

(1) "m" is reached for the first time after s steps.

(2) "m" is reached for the first time in 1 step and then, starting from "m" it is again reached in $s-1$ steps.

(3) "m" is reached for the first time in 2 steps and then, starting from "m", it is reached again in $s-2$ steps, and so forth. We note furthermore that the probability that "m" will be reached for the first time in k steps and then, starting from "m," it will be reached again in $s-k$ steps, is

$$P'(n \mid m; k)P(m \mid m; s-k). \tag{68}$$

This completes the proof of (67).

It should be emphasized that the justification of using the product of probabilities in (68) rests upon the fact that in our process the past is independent of the future. In other words, once we know that the system starts, say, from "m," its subsequent behavior is independent of the way in which "m" was reached in the first place.

We introduce now the generating functions

$$h(n \mid m; z) = \sum_{s=1}^{\infty} P(n \mid m; s)z^s \tag{69}$$

$$g(n \mid m; z) = \sum_{s=1}^{\infty} P'(n \mid m; s)z^s, \tag{70}$$

and note that (67) is equivalent to

$$h(n \mid m; z) = g(n \mid m; z) + h(m \mid m; z)g(n \mid m; z),$$

or

$$g(n \mid m; z) = \frac{h(n \mid m; z)}{1 + h(m \mid m; z)}. \tag{71}$$

In particular,

$$g(n \mid n; z) = \frac{h(n \mid n; z)}{1 + h(n \mid n; z)} = 1 - \frac{1}{1 + h(n \mid n; z)}, \tag{72}$$

and we also note that

$$\frac{dg(n \mid n; z)}{dz} = \frac{\dfrac{dh(n \mid n; z)}{dz}}{(1 + h(n \mid n; z)^2}. \tag{73}$$

From the definition of $g(n \mid n; z)$, we obtain

$$\lim_{z \to 1} g(n \mid n; z) = \sum_{s=1}^{\infty} P'(n \mid n; s) \tag{74}$$

$$\tau \lim_{z \to 1} \frac{dg(n \mid n; z)}{dz} = \sum_{s=1}^{\infty} s\tau P'(n \mid n; s). \tag{75}$$

It is from these formulas that we shall derive (65) and (66). We have, using (62)

$$h(n \mid n; z) = \frac{(-1)^{R+n}}{2^{2R}} \sum_{j=-R}^{R} \sum_{s=1}^{\infty} \left(\frac{jz}{R}\right)^s C_{R+j}^{(-n)} C_{R+n}^{(j)},$$

and since

$$1 = \frac{(-1)^{R+n}}{2^{2R}} \sum_{j=-R}^{R} C_{R+j}^{(-n)} C_{R+n}^{(j)},$$

we obtain

$$1 + h(n \mid n; z) = \frac{(-1)^{R+n}}{2^{2R}} \sum_{j=-R}^{R} \frac{1}{1 - \dfrac{j}{R} z} C_{R+j}^{(-n)} C_{R+n}^{(j)}. \tag{76}$$

All terms in the sum on the right hand side of (76) are regular at $z = 1$ except the term corresponding to $j = R$, which has a simple pole at that point. Thus we can write

$$1 + h(n \mid n; z) = p(z) + \frac{(-1)^{R+n}}{2^{2R}} C_{2R}^{(-n)} C_{R+n}^{(R)} \frac{1}{1 - z},$$

where $p(z)$ is regular at $z = 1$. We see that

$$\lim_{z \to 1} (1 + h(n \mid n; z)) = \infty$$

and hence, using (72) and (74)

$$\sum_{s=1}^{\infty} P'(n \mid n; s) = 1.$$

It is easy to see that

$$\frac{(-1)^{R+n}}{2^{2R}} C_{2R}^{(-n)} C_{R+n}^{(R)} = \frac{1}{2^{2R}} \frac{(2R)!}{(R+n)!(R-n)!},$$

and, denoting this expression by ω, we have (for $|z| > 1$)

$$\frac{dg(n \mid n; z)}{dz} = \frac{(1-z)^2 p'(z) + \omega}{[(1-z)p(z) + \omega]^2},$$

and hence

$$\lim_{z \to 1} \frac{dg(n \mid n; z)}{dz} = \frac{1}{\omega}.$$

This together with (75) yields (66).

The above considerations can be extended to more general processes. However, Markoffian processes (*i.e.*, processes for which (68) is valid) are still the only ones for which one can also calculate the "fluctuation" of the recurrence time, namely, the quantity

$$\sum_{s=1}^{\infty} s^2 \tau^2 P'(n \mid n; s) - \theta_n^2. \tag{77}$$

Without going into the details, let us mention that (77) can be calculated in terms of

$$\lim_{z \to 1} \frac{d^2 g(n \mid n; z)}{dz^2}.$$

The fluctuation (77) gives us a measure of stability of the mean recurrence time inasmuch as it permits us to estimate how likely (or unlikely) it is to get a specified deviation of the actual recurrence time from the mean. It may seem that since the generating function $g(n \mid n; z)$ is known explictly it should be easy to get an explicit expression for $P'(n \mid n; s)$. This, however, is not the case. We have not succeeded in finding such an expression, except for $P'(0 \mid 0; s)$, and even then we had to use a different method. We shall give a brief description of this method. Let

$$P(n \mid m; 1) = p_{nm}.$$

Then,

$$P'(n \mid n; s) = \sum_{m_1, \cdots, m_{s-1}}' p_{nm_1} p_{m_1 m_2} \cdots p_{m_{s-1} n},$$

where the accent on the summation sign indicates that $m_j \neq n, j = 1, 2, \cdots, s-1$. Now let

$$\epsilon_i = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if } i = n \\ 1 & \text{if } i \neq n. \end{cases}$$

Noticing that

$$\epsilon_i^2 = \epsilon_i,$$

we can write

$$P'(n \mid n; s) = \sum_{m_1, \cdots, m_{s-1}}' p_{nm_1}\epsilon_{m_1}p_{m_1m_2}\epsilon_{m_2}p_{m_2m_3} \cdots \epsilon_{m_{s-2}}p_{m_{s-2}m_{s-1}}\epsilon_{m_{s-1}}p_{m_{s-1}n},$$

where the summation is now extended over all m_j. If B is the matrix

$$((p_{nm})),$$

and B_1 the matrix

$$((\epsilon_n p_{nm} \epsilon_m)),$$

we see that

$$P'(n \mid n; s) = (n, n) \text{ element of } BB_1^{s-2}B. \tag{78}$$

We may note that B_1 is obtained from B by crossing out the nth row and the nth column of the latter, and replacing them by a row and column consisting entirely of zeros. If B_1 can be explicitly diagonalized, that is, written in the form

$$B_1 = P_1 \begin{bmatrix} \mu_1 & & 0 \\ & \mu_2 & \\ & & \ddots \\ 0 & & \ddots \end{bmatrix} Q_1,$$

where

$$P_1Q_1 = I$$

one can calculate $P'(n \mid n; s)$, explicitly using (78).

We have applied this method to the Ehrenfest model, but only in the case when the middle (zeroth) row and column of B are replaced by a row and column consisting entirely of zeros have we been able to diagonalize explicitly the resulting matrix B_1. The diagonalization proceeds very much as in Section 4, but it has proved necessary to distinguish between the cases when R is even or odd. In case R is even, we were able to derive the formula

$$P'(0 \mid 0; s) = -\frac{1}{2^{2R-1}} \frac{R+1}{2R} \sum \left(\frac{j}{R}\right)^{s-2} C_{R-j}^{(-1)} C_{R-1}^{(j)}, \qquad s \geqq 2, \tag{79}$$

where the summation is extended over all odd integers j between $-R$ and R. The details of the derivation are somewhat tedious and will not be reproduced here. Formula (79) furnishes a partial solution to a question left open by Wang and Uhlenbeck [1].

References

1. An extensive list of references to the physical literature can be found in the following articles: G. E. Uhlenbeck and L. S. Ornstein, On the theory of Brownian motion, Phys. Rev. 36 (1930) pp. 823–841, M. C. Wang and G. E. Uhlenbeck, On the theory of Brownian motion II, Rev. Mod. Phys. 17 (1945) pp. 323–342. For a very complete summary of earlier results see the important paper of Smoluchowski, Drei Vortrage über Diffusion, Brownsche Molekularbewegung und Koagulation von Kolloidteilchen, Phys. Zeit. 17 (1916) pp. 557–571 and 585–599.

2. References to the work of Wiener, Kolmogoroff, Doob and Feller are given in the second article in [1]. See also P. Lévy, Sur certains processus stochastiques homogènes, Comp. Math. 7 (1939) pp. 283–339, R. Fortet, Les fonctions aléatoires du type de Markoff associées à certain équations paraboliques, Jour. de Math. 22 (1943) pp. 177–243.

3. For a brief discussion of the nature of the friction coefficient f see the first article in [1].

4. For proofs of this theorem the reader is referred to H. Cramér, Mathematical Methods of Statistics, Princeton University Press (1946), in particular, pp. 198–203.

5. For a complete presentation of the matrix method as applied to Markoff chains see M. Fréchet, Traité du Calcul des Probabilités, Tome I, Fasc. III Second Livre, Paris, Gauthier-Villars (1936).

6. For the proof of the continuity theorem in its most general form see Cramér's book [4] pp. 96–100.

7. Über zwei bekannte Einwände gegen das Boltzmannsche H-Theorem, Phys. Zeit. 8 (1907) pp. 311–314.

8. Das Ehrenfestsche Model der H-Kurve, Phys. Zeit. 27 (1926), pp. 306–313.

9. M. Kac, Bull. Am. Math. Soc. 52 (1946) p. 621 (abstract).

10. See footnote 27 in the second paper of [1].

11. See the paper [8] and for a derivation based on an entirely different principle H. Steinhaus, La théorie and les applications des fonctions indépendantes au sens stochastique, Actualités Scientifiques et Industrielles 738 (1938) Paris, Hermann et Cie, pp. 57–73, in particular, pp. 61–64.

12. See the third article in [1] p. 568.

VIBRATION MODES OF TAPERED BEAMS

EDMUND PINNEY, University of California

The vibration modes of harmonically oscillating thin beams are obtained by solving the differential equation

$$(d^2/dx^2)(EId^2y/dx^2) - \rho\omega^2 y = 0 \tag{1}$$

subject to certain boundary conditions. In this differential equation, x is the distance along the beam, y is the amplitude of the transverse vibration, E is Young's modulus for the beam material, I is the cross-sectional moment of inertia of the beam, ρ is its linear density, and ω is the circular frequency of vibration.

When EI and ρ are constant along the beam the solution of (1) is simple, and may be expressed in terms of trigonometric and hyperbolic functions. The frequency ω will be a root of a simple transcendental equation. Such theories are to be found in most textbooks on vibration theory.

When EI and ρ vary very slowly with x, solutions to (1) may be obtained by writing $EI=E_0I_0[1+\xi(x)]$, $\rho=\rho_0[1+\eta(x)]$, $y=y_0(x)+\zeta(x)$, where E_0I_0 and ρ_0 are constants, where $y_0(x)$ is a linear combination of

$$\text{sh } (kx), \quad \text{ch } (kx), \quad \sin (kx), \quad \cos (kx), \tag{2}$$

where the quantities ξ, η, ζ/y_0 are much smaller than unity, and where

$$k^4 = \rho_0\omega^2/E_0I_0. \tag{3}$$

Substituting into (1) and neglecting terms of higher order than the first in ξ, η, ζ, we obtain

$$d^4\zeta/dx^4 - k^4\zeta = f(x), \tag{4}$$

where

$$f(x) = -(d^2/dx^2)(\xi d^2y_0/dx^2) + k^4y_0\eta. \tag{5}$$

Equation (4) has a particular solution

$$\zeta(x) = \tfrac{1}{2}k^{-3}\int^x f(t)[\text{sh } k(x-t) - \sin k(x-t)]dt. \tag{6}$$

The general solution is obtained by adding to this an arbitrary linear combination of the functions in (2).

If EI and ρ may be represented by a finite number of terms of a Fourier series, then y may be obtained from (1) as a Fourier series whose coefficients are the solutions of certain algebraic equations [1; §VII]. This method is useful for beams of greater taper than those to which the analysis of the preceding paragraph may be applied. Another method of great practical importance is due to Myklestad [2; Ch. VI].

When EI and ρ are certain particular functions of x, it is possible to obtain exact solutions of (1) in terms of known functions. One case of considerable interest is that in which

$$EI = E_0I_0x^{\mu+2}, \qquad \rho = \rho_0x^{4\beta+\mu-2}, \tag{7}$$

where E_0I_0 and ρ_0 are constants. The case where $\beta=0$ leads to solutions of the form x^p where $p(p-1)(p+\mu)(p+\mu-1)=k^4$. If one of the four conditions

$$\beta = 1/2, \quad \beta = -1/2, \quad \beta = \mu/2, \quad \beta = -\mu/2 \tag{8}$$

holds, the vibration modes of the beam may be expressed in terms of Bessel functions.

To show this, we insert (7) into (1), getting

$$x^2(d^2/dx^2)\,(x^{\mu+2}d^2y/dx^2) - k^4x^{4\beta+\mu}y = 0. \tag{9}$$

If we write

$$\theta = x\frac{d}{dx},$$

it follows that

$$x^2\frac{d^2}{dx^2} = \theta(\theta - 1)$$

and that

$$\theta(x^nf) = x^n(\theta + n)f.$$

Using these, we may write (9) in the form

$$\theta(\theta - 1)(\theta - \mu)(\theta - \mu - 1)y = k^4x^{4\beta}y. \tag{10}$$

By [3; §4.5], the equation

$$(\theta + \alpha)(\theta + \alpha - 2\beta)(\theta + \alpha - 2\beta\nu)(\theta + \alpha - 2\beta - 2\beta\nu)y = \beta^4c^4x^{4\beta}y \tag{11}$$

has the solution

$$y = x^{\beta\nu-\alpha}[AJ_\nu(cx^\beta) + BY_\nu(cx^\beta) + CI_\nu(cx^\beta) + DK_\nu(cx^\beta)]. \tag{12}$$

Comparing (10) and (11), we see that solutions may be obtained in the following cases:

(13)

Type	ν	β	$\beta\nu-\alpha$	c
I	μ	1/2	$\mu/2$	$2k$
II	$-\mu$	$-1/2$	$\mu/2+1$	$2k$
III	$1/\mu$	$\mu/2$	1/2	$2k/\mu$
IV	$1/\mu$	$-\mu/2$	$\mu+1/2$	$2k/\mu$

Beams of type *I* are of particular interest because the exponent for EI is 2 greater than that for ρ, a situation often encountered in practice. Examples are the wedge, corresponding to $\mu=1$, and the cone, corresponding to $\mu=2$. For modes of type *I*

$$y = F_\mu(A, B, C, D; x), \tag{14}$$

where

$$F_\mu(A, B, C, D; x) = x^{\mu/2}[AJ_\mu(2kx^{1/2}) + BY_\mu(2kx^{1/2}) + CI_\mu(2kx^{1/2}) + DK_\mu(2kx^{1/2})]. \tag{15}$$

By [3; §§3.2, 3.56, 3.71], it is known that

$$F_\mu'(A, B, C, D; x) = kF_{\mu-1}(A, B, C, -D, x), \tag{16}$$

and

$$F_{\mu+1}(A, B, C, D; x) + xF_{\mu-1}(A, B, -C, -D; x) = (\mu/k)F_{\mu}(A, B, -C, D; x). \tag{17}$$

It follows from (16) that the vibration frequencies for a free-free beam (end conditions: $y''=0$, $y'''=0$) of type I are the same as those of a similar clamped-clamped beam (end conditions: $y=0$, $y'=0$) of type I in which μ is replaced by $\mu-2$.

For beams of types I, II, III, and IV, (12) provides the basis for the solution of a large number of beam vibration problems. The determination of the natural period of vibration of such a beam usually leads to a fourth order determinant whose elements are Bessel functions. The roots can be calculated numerically without very great difficulty if the Bessel functions are tabluated. Forced vibration problems of such beams are similar in theory and complexity.

In the preliminary design of aircraft this theory may be useful in obtaining approximate vibration modes of airplane wings to be used in preliminary flutter calculations. Many wings have tip chords that are small in comparison with their root chords. Such winds may, with little error, be considered to taper to a point at a distance a, say, from the root of the wing. The wing should be approximately of type I.

To avoid singularities, take $B=D=0$ in (15). Also $y=0$, $y'=0$ when $x=a$ for a wing that may be considered to be cantilevered at the root. From (15) and (16), we have

$$F_{\mu}(A, 0, C, 0; a) = 0, \qquad F_{\mu-1}(A, 0, C, 0; a) = 0. \tag{18}$$

By (3), (15), if $z_1, z_2, \cdots$, are roots of

$$J_{\mu}(z)/J_{\mu-1}(z) = I_{\mu}(z)/I_{\mu-1}(z), \tag{19}$$

then the vibration frequencies, $\omega_1, \omega_2, \cdots$, are given by

$$\omega_n = (z_n^2/4a)(E_0I_0/\rho_0)^{1/2}, \qquad n = 1, 2, \cdots. \tag{20}$$

The ratio C/A may then be computed from (18).

For wings that cannot be considered to taper to a point, this determination may still be useful in providing a first approximation for the frequency calibration.

By (13), the vibration modes may be expressed in terms of elementary functions when $\mu=n+\frac{1}{2}$ for beams of types I and II, and when $\mu=2/(2n+1)$ for beams of types III and IV, n being an integer.

References

1. B. F. Ruffner, The use of Fourier series in the solution of beam-column problems, Bulletin Series no. 21, Engineering Experiment Station, Oregon State College.

2. N. O. Myklestad, Vibration Analysis, McGraw-Hill Co., 1944.

3. G. N. Watson, Theory of Bessel Functions, Cambridge University Press, 1944.

TETRAHEDRONS HAVING A COMMON FACE*

VICTOR THÉBAULT, Tennie, Sarthe, France

The main theorem of this paper is: *Consider two tetrahedrons* $T \equiv ABCD$, $T' \equiv A'BCD$, *having a common face* BCD. *Let the perpendiculars at* A *to faces* CDA, DAB, ABC *of* T *meet the planes of the faces* $A'CD$, $A'DB$, $A'BC$ *of* T' *in* A_1, A_2, A_3, *and the perpendiculars at* A' *to faces* $A'CD$, $A'DB$, $A'BC$ *of* T' *meet the planes of faces* CDA, DAB, ABC *of* T *in* A'_1, A'_2, A'_3. *Then the perpendiculars from* A *to plane* $A_1A_2A_3$ *and from* A' *to plane* $A'_1A'_2A'_3$ *meet in a point in the common face* BCD.

If we designate by β, γ, δ the angles made by planes $A'CD$, $A'DB$, $A'BC$ with the face BCD, and further designate by a and a', b and b', c and c' the dihedral angles having for edges BC and DA, $\cdots$, of T, the equations of the perpendicular from the vertex A to the plane $A_1A_2A_3$ are:

$$\frac{y}{\sin c' \cot (c' - \beta)} = \frac{z}{\sin b' \cot (b' - \gamma)} = \frac{t}{\sin a \cot (a - \delta)}.$$

This perpendicular meets the plane of face BCD in a point A'' whose normal coördinates with respect to the triangle BCD are:

$$(y', z', t') \sim \cot (c' - \beta), \cot (b' - \gamma), \cot (a - \delta).$$

Because of symmetry, the perpendicular from A' to the plane $A'_1A'_2A'_3$ meets the plane of face BCD in the same point A''. Hence the theorem.

If the tetrahedron T is orthocentric and $A' \equiv H$, the feet of the altitudes of triangle BCD being B_1, C_1, D_1, then

$$\frac{y'}{\tan B_1AB} = \frac{z'}{\tan C_1AC} = \frac{t'}{\tan D_1AD}.$$

But in the triangle D_1AD,

$$AH = \frac{DD_1}{\tan D_1AD} \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{y'}{BB_1} = \frac{z'}{CC_1} = \frac{t'}{DD_1}.$$

Hence $A''(y', z', t')$ coincides with the centroid of BCD. This provides the solution for problem 4150 [1945, 102].

Our theorem also answers the following question which we have raised (*Annales de la Société Scientifique de Bruxelles*, 1925, p. 302) and which has heretofore remained unanswered. Two given tetrahedrons $T \equiv ABCD$ and $T' \equiv A'B'C'D'$ are homological. The perpendiculars at A to the faces CDA, DAB, ABC of T meet the planes of faces $A'C'D'$, $A'D'B'$, $A'B'C'$ of T' in A_1, A_2, A_3, and the perpendiculars at A' to the faces $A'C'D'$, $A'D'B'$, $A'B'C'$ of T' meet the planes of faces CDA, DAB, ABC of T in A'_1, A'_2, A'_3. In the same way we obtain, relative to the vertices B, C, D of T and B', C', D' of T', the triads of

* Translation from the French by J. B. Lennes, University of Oklahoma.

points (B_1, B_2, B_3) and $B'_1, B'_2, B'_3)$, $\cdots$. The perpendiculars from A, B, C, D to the planes $A_1A_2A_3$, $B_1B_2B_3$, $\cdots$, meet in a point O, and the perpendiculars from A', B', C', D' to the planes $A'_1A'_2A'_3$, $B'_1B'_2B'_3$, $\cdots$, meet in a point O'. Are O and O' corresponding points in the homology $(ABCD, A'B'C'D')$?

The answer is affirmative, for it is sufficient to show that lines AO and $A'O'$, BO and $B'O'$, CO and $C'O'$, DO and $D'O'$ meet the plane of homology (P) in the same points, as shown by the preceding theorem. It can be added that the point O is on the perpendicular to plane (P) through the isogonal conjugate O_1 of the center of homology with respect to the tetrahedron T, and that O' is on the perpendicular to (P) through the isogonal conjugate O' of the center of homology with respect to T'.

In the general case first treated above, the perpendicular AX from a point $P \equiv A'$ whose normal coördinates in T are (x_1, y_1, z_1, t_1) to the plane $A_1A_2A_3$ has the following equations:

$$\frac{y}{\frac{\cos c'}{x_1} + \frac{1}{y_1}} = \frac{z}{\frac{\cos b'}{x_1} + \frac{1}{z_1}} = \frac{t}{\frac{\cos a}{x_1} + \frac{1}{t_1}},$$

and meets the plane of face BCD in a point P' whose coördinates are:

$$\frac{y}{\frac{\cos c'}{x_1} + \frac{1}{y_1}} = \cdots = \frac{3V}{\frac{A}{x_1} + \frac{B}{y_1} + \frac{C}{z_1} + \frac{D}{t_1}},$$

A, B, C, D being the areas of the faces and V the volume of T.

(a) If P is on Cayley's cubic surface

$$\frac{A}{x} + \frac{B}{y} + \frac{C}{z} + \frac{D}{t} = 0,$$

the line $AX \equiv AP'$ is parallel to plane BCD which is normal to plane $A_1A_2A_3$. In particular, this is the case when P coincides with the midpoint of one of the 28 line-segments joining the centers of the spheres tangent to the four planes of the faces of T.

(b) The equations of the perpendiculars BY, CZ, DT from B, C, D to the planes $B_1B_2B_3$, $C_1C_2C_3$, $D_1D_2D_3$ (paragraph 2) are similar in form to that of AX. The following relations are necessary and sufficient in order that the four lines AX, BY, CZ, DT shall be generators of a hyperboloid:

$$\frac{\cos c'}{x_1} + \frac{1}{y_1} = \frac{\cos c'}{y_1} + \frac{1}{x_1},$$

$$\frac{\cos b'}{x_1} + \frac{1}{z_1} = \frac{\cos b'}{z_1} + \frac{1}{x_1},$$

$$\frac{\cos a}{x_1}+\frac{1}{t_1}=\frac{\cos a}{t_1}+\frac{1}{x_1}.$$

Hence $x_1=y_1=z_1=t_1$.

The point P coincides with the center I of the sphere inscribed in T and the hyperboloid is the one formed by the lines joining the vertices to the points of tangency of the opposite faces with the inscribed sphere. These lines are concurrent if

$$\cos \tfrac{1}{2}a \cos \tfrac{1}{2}a' = \cos \tfrac{1}{2}b \cos \tfrac{1}{2}b' = \cos \tfrac{1}{2}c \cos \tfrac{1}{2}c',$$

that is, if the tetrahedron is isogonic.*

As a consequence we have the theorem: *In any tetrahedron $T\equiv ABCD$ let the perpendiculars at A to the faces CDA, DAB, ABC, meet the bisecting planes ICD, IDB, IBC, $\cdots$, in A_1, A_2, A_3, $\cdots$. Then the perpendiculars from A, B, C, D, to the planes $A_1A_2A_3$, $B_1B_2B_3$, $\cdots$, pass through the points of contact of the inscribed sphere with the opposite faces.*

All the properties apply to the triangle. Given a triangle ABC and a point P in the same plane. The perpendiculars at A to AB and AC meet BP and CP in A_1 and A_2; we have the analogous points B_1 and B_2, C_1 and C_2. The perpendiculars from A, B, C to A_1A_2, B_1B_2, C_1C_2 meet BC, CA, AB in X, Y, Z. Let $(AB, AP)=\alpha$, $(AP, AC)=\alpha'$, $(BC, BP)=\beta$, $(BP, BA)=\beta'$, $(CA, CP)=\gamma$, $(CP, CB)=\gamma'$. We have

$BX/XC=\tan\gamma/\tan\beta'$, $CY/YA=\tan\alpha/\tan\gamma'$, $AZ/ZB=\tan\beta/\tan\alpha'$, and

$$\frac{BX}{XC}\cdot\frac{CY}{YA}\cdot\frac{AZ}{ZB}=\frac{\tan\alpha\tan\beta\tan\gamma}{\tan\alpha'\tan\beta'\tan\gamma'}. \tag{1}$$

Now, if A', B', C' are the orthogonal projections of P on BC, CA, AB, we have also

$$\frac{BA'}{A'C}\cdot\frac{CB'}{B'A}\cdot\frac{AC'}{C'B}=\frac{\tan\alpha\tan\beta\tan\gamma}{\tan\alpha'\tan\beta'\tan\gamma'}. \tag{2}$$

When point P describes the cubic of Darboux circumscribed about the triangle ABC, the lines AA', BB', CC' are concurrent; the two members of equation (2) have the value -1, and, by (1), the lines AX, BY, CZ meet in a point Q. Conversely, if lines AX, BY, CZ are concurrent, point P describes the cubic of Darboux.†

The locus of point Q is the cubic of Lucas, and the perpendiculars to BC, CA, AB from X, Y, Z meet in the isogonal conjugate of P with respect to triangle ABC.

* See Nathan Altshiller-Court, Modern Pure Solid Geometry, New York, 1935, p. 290, art. 879.

† We do not know if this method of generating the cubics of Darboux and Lucas has been noticed heretofore. (V.T.)

In particular, if in a triangle ABC, P coincides with the orthocenter, points X, Y, Z are the midpoints of BC, CA, AB, and Q coincides with the centroid.

When P describes the circumscribed circle, AX, BY, CZ are parallel to BC, CA, AB.

Finally, if P coincides with the center of one of the tritangent circles, X, Y, Z are the points of contact of this circle with BC, CA, AB, and Q is the Gergonne point of the triangle, or one of its associated points.

INSTRUCTION AND RESEARCH IN APPLIED MATHEMATICS*

The history of mathematics reveals a continuous interplay of ideas between the mathematician and the experimental or practical scientist. In the last half-century this interplay has decreased, to the detriment, it may be believed, of both parties. The war caused a lively cooperation, but unless this continues under peacetime conditions, the prospect for the future is serious and warrants earnest consideration.

The widening gap between the mathematician and other scientists may be traced to several causes. The most obvious of these is the great activity in all branches of science, which has necessitated a high degree of specialization in each branch, and consequently less opportunity for roaming interests. However, side by side with the expansion of science, increased understanding of basic theory acts as a simplifying compensation. Such simplification is achieved largely through mathematical methods, of increasing depth and generality, and it would be indeed unfortunate if mathematicians should not be in a position to contribute towards this simplification.

As our educational system is at present organized, there are relatively few opportunities for a student of mathematics, undergraduate or graduate, to become acquainted with the mathematical structures of the theories underlying other sciences. His needs in this connection are not identical with those of students pursuing other branches of science as their major interest; many practical details, of importance to them, are not essential for his purpose, and he can go further and faster by concentration on the mathematical aspects of the subject. It is suggested that the study of some branches of other sciences from the mathematical standpoint (and that is a meaning commonly attached to the words "applied mathematics") should be regarded, wherever feasible, as an essential part of the training of mathematics majors, undergraduate or graduate. Apart from the general advantage to science which we might hope to see as a result of this procedure, it seems only fair to offer a young mathematician the opportunity of pursuing a career in applied mathematics if his natural inclinations are so directed. Unless he has the opportunity of viewing the field of applied

* Prepared by the special committee of the American Mathematical Society on applied mathematics, and approved by the Council of the Society and the Board of Governors of the Association.

mathematics from the mathematical standpoint, it is unlikely that he will be attracted to it if his interests are basically those of a mathematician.

Consequently it is suggested that departments of mathematics throughout the country should consider the feasibility of enlarging their offerings in the direction of applied mathematics, both on the undergraduate and graduate levels, insofar as the departments are qualified to offer such instruction. Many branches of applied mathematics have not only well established axiomatic mathematical structures, but are also fruitful fields of research, involving mathematical ideas and techniques of the highest order. Attention may in particular be directed to mathematical statistics, theoretical mechanics (including elasticity and fluid dynamics), statistical mechanics and thermodynamics, heat conduction, electromagnetic theory, relativity, quantum mechanics, genetics, and the theory of high polymers.

In some institutions the problem is already solved in part by the activities of other departments, containing members well qualified in mathematics. Nevertheless, since each of the subjects listed above has not only its mathematical side, but also an even greater experimental or practical side, it appears likely that full justice can be done to the mathematical theories only by a specialization on that aspect. Needless to say, the task of maintaining and increasing an interplay between mathematics and the other sciences is one that can be dealt with only by full cooperaton between all the parties concerned. It is to be expected that scientists in other fields would welcome the desire of young mathematicians to increase their knowledge of the mathematical structures of those fields, for the sake of a wider mathematical perspective and in the case of those qualified to pursue research, with a view to solving outstanding problems and simplifying basic theory by mathematical methods of increased generality and power.

A similar gap in the background of our students lies in the field of computation. Even if we carefully distinguish mathematical computation and computation engineering, there is much of importance concerning numerical computation and its organization for hand computer, IBM equipment, relay calculator or electronic computer, which will be of value to the student whether he is to become a topologist, a flutter analyst, or a mathematical logician. Of equal importance is the field of algebraic and analytic computation and its possibilities of mechanization. With the exception of a few institutions where the engineers have begun to work on computation engineering, this whole field is at the disposal of the departments of mathematics.

Consequently, it is suggested that departments of mathematics throughout the country should consider the feasibility of enlarging their offerings in computation, algebraic, analytic, or numerical, at both the undergraduate and graduate levels.

THE WILLIAM LOWELL PUTNAM MATHEMATICAL COMPETITION

G. W. MACKEY, Harvard University

The following results of the seventh annual William Lowell Putnam Mathematical competition held May 24, 1947, have been determined in accordance with the rules of the Competition agreed to by the representatives of the Mathematical Association and the trustees of the William Lowell Putnam Intercollegiate Memorial Fund. The contestants were known to the reader only by number.

The first prize, four hundred dollars, is awarded to the Department of Mathematics of Harvard University, Cambridge, Massachusetts. The members of the team were C. W. Hewlett, Jr., J. J. Newman, W. F. Stinespring; to each of these, a prize of forty dollars is awarded.

The second prize, three hundred dollars, is awarded to the Department of Mathematics of Yale University, New Haven, Connecticut. The members of the team were Murray Gell-Mann, Murray Gerstenhaber, and Henry Otto Pollak; to each of these a prize of thirty dollars is awarded.

The third prize, two hundred dollars, is awarded to the Department of Mathematics of Columbia University, New York, New York. The members of the team were Alex Heller, Harold Lehrer, and Maxwell Rosenlicht; to each of these, a prize of twenty dollars is awarded.

The fourth prize, one hundred dollars, is awarded to the Department of Mathematics of the University of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. The members of the team were Joachim Ehrman, Donald F. Hunt, and William Turanski; to each of these, a prize of ten dollars is awarded.

The five persons ranking highest in the examination, named in alphabetical order, were: C. W. Hewlett, Jr., Harvard University; Maxwell Rosenlicht, Columbia University; W. F. Stinespring, Harvard University; William Turanski, University of Pennsylvania; Eoin L. Whitney, University of Alberta. Each of these will receive a prize of forty dollars.

The five succeeding persons ranking highest in the examination, named in alphabetical order, were: Leonard Geller, Brooklyn College; Harry Gonshor, McGill University; Julian Kielson, Brooklyn College; John F. Nash, Jr., Carnegie Institute of Technology; Henry Otto Pollak, Yale University. Each of these will receive a prize of twenty dollars.

The following teams, named in alphabetical order, won honorable mention: Brooklyn College, Brooklyn, New York, the members of the team being Melvin Hausner, Robert Margolies, and George Shapiro; University of California, Berkeley, California, the members of the team being Marvin P. Epstein, George E. Gourrich, and Roger A. Stafford; Carnegie Institute of Technology, Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, the members of the team being George W. Hinman, John F. Nash, Jr., and Robert I. Van Nice; Northwestern University, Evanston, Illinois, the members of the team being Donald B. MacMillan, James E. Murrin,

and Ernest Tilden Parker; Queen's University, Kingston, Ontario, the members of the team being Robert W. Butcher, Thomas G. Donnelly, and Donald W. Dunn; University of Toronto, Toronto, Canada, the members of the team being W. T. Sharp, Miss M. J. Straus, and W. J. D. Lewis.

Fifteen individuals were given honorable mention. The names are listed in alphabetical order. G. F. D. Duff, Toronto University; Joachim Ehrman, University of Pennsylvania; Murray Gell-Mann, Yale University; Murray Gerstenhaber, Yale University; George E. Gourrich, University of California; Melvin Hausner, Brooklyn College; Donald B. MacMillan, Northwestern University; J. J. Newman, Harvard University; John F. Riordan, Massachusetts Institute of Technology; William Riordan, Massachusetts Institute of Technology; George Shapiro, Brooklyn College; W. T. Sharp, University of Toronto; Roger A. Stafford, University of California; James E. Storer, Cornell University.

The following is a list of all colleges and universities which entered teams in the Competition. The list, in alphabetical order, is: University of Alberta, Boston College, Brooklyn College, University of California (Berkeley), University of California at Los Angeles, Carleton College, Carnegie Institute of Technology, College of St. Thomas, University of Colorado, Columbia University, Cornell University, Harvard University, Haverford College, Loyola College (Montreal), Loyola College (New Orleans), Massachusetts Institute of Technology, McGill University, Northwestern University, Oklahoma Agricultural and Mechanical College, University of Oklahoma, University of Pennsylvania, Queen's College, Queen's University, Rutgers University, Swarthmore College, Texas Technological College, University of Toronto, Ursinus College, United States Naval Academy, Wayne University, University of Washington, and Yale University.

The following additional colleges and universities entered individual contestants only: Case School of Applied Science, Purdue University, University of Saskatchewan, and Washington University.

A total of 145 undergraduates representing 36 institutions took part in the competition.

Participants in the competition were given the following lists of problems.

Part I. Three Hours

(Answer the questions in any order and by any method. Show all your work in logical sequence, and indicate your answers clearly. No tables or other books may be used.)

1. If $\{a_n\}$ is a sequence of numbers such that for $n \geqq 1$

$$(2 - a_n)a_{n+1} = 1,$$

prove that $\lim a_n$, as $n \to \infty$, exists and is equal to one.

2. A real valued continuous function satisfies for all real x and y the functional equation

$$f(\sqrt{x^2 + y^2}) = f(x)f(y).$$

Prove that

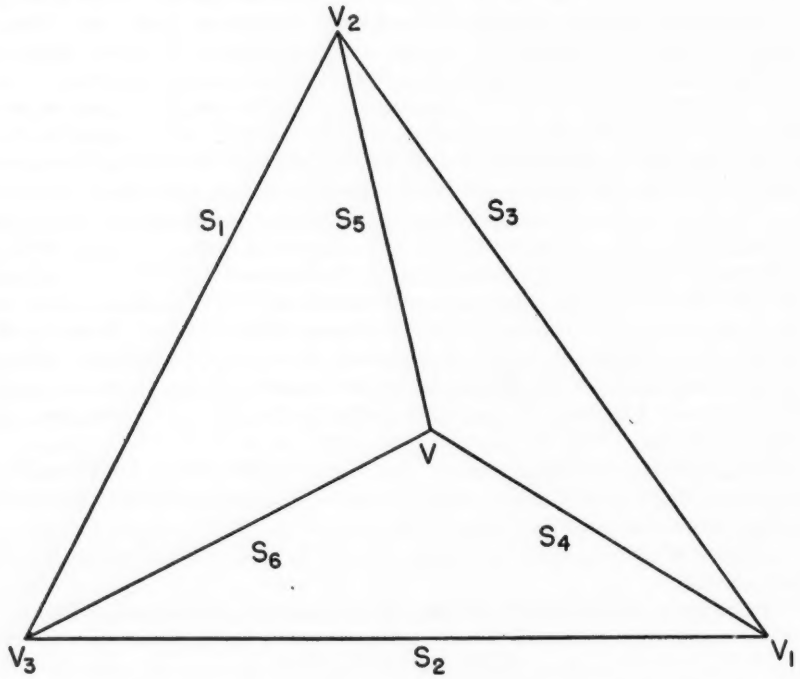
$$f(x) = [f(1)]^{x^2}.$$

3. Given this figure and any two points Q_1, Q_2 in the plane not lying on any of the segments $s_1, s_2, \cdots, s_6$, show that there does not exist a polygonal line P joining Q_1, and Q_2 such that:

(1) P crosses each s_i, $i=1, 2, \cdots, 6$, exactly once;

(2) P does not intersect itself;

(3) P does not pass through any vertex V, V_1, V_2, V_3.



4. A coast artillery gun can fire at any angle of elevation between 0° and 90° in a fixed vertical plane. If air resistance is neglected and the muzzle velocity is constant ($=v_0$), determine the set H of points in the plane and above the horizontal which can be hit.

5. a_1, b_1, c_1 are positive numbers whose sum is 1, and for $n=1, 2, \cdots$ we define $a_{n+1}=a_n^2+2b_nc_n$, $b_{n+1}=b_n^2+2c_na_n$, $c_{n+1}=c_n^2+2a_nb_n$. Show that a_n, b_n, c_n approach limits as $n\to\infty$ and find these limits.

6. A three by three matrix has determinant zero, and has the further property that the cofactor of any element is equal to the square of that element.

(The cofactor of a_{ij} is $(-1)^{i+j}$ multiplied by the determinant obtained by striking out the ith row and jth column.) Show that every element in the matrix is zero.

PART II. THREE HOURS

(Answer the questions in any order and by any method. Show all your work in logical sequence, and indicate your answers clearly. No tables or other books may be used.)

7. Let $f(x)$ be a function such that $f(1)=1$ and for $x \geqq 1$

$$f'(x) = \frac{1}{x^2 + f^2(x)}.$$

Prove that

$$\lim_{x \to \infty} f(x)$$

exists and is less than $1+\pi/4$.

8. Let $f(x)$ be a differentiable function defined in the closed interval (0, 1) and such that

$$|f'(x)| \leqq M, \qquad 0 < x < 1.$$

Prove that

$$\left| \int_0^1 f(x)dx - \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^{n} f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) \right| \leqq \frac{M}{n}.$$

9. Let x, y be Cartesian coördinates in the plane. I denotes the line segment $1 \leqq x \leqq 3$, $y=1$. For every point P on I, let P^* denote that point that lies on the segment joining the origin to P and such that the distance PP^* is equal to $1/100$. As P describes I, the corresponding point P^* describes a certain curve C^*. Let $l(I)$, $l(C^*)$ be the lengths of I and C^* respectively. Which one of $l(I)$, $l(C^*)$ is greater? Prove your answer.

10. Given $P(z)=z^2+az+b$, a quadratic polynomial of the complex variable z with complex coefficients a, b. Suppose that $|P(z)|=1$ for every z such that $|z|=1$. Prove that $a=b=0$.

11. a, b, c, d are distinct integers such that

$$(x-a)(x-b)(x-c)(x-d) - 4 = 0$$

has an integral root r. Show that $4r=a+b+c+d$.

12. C is a fixed point on OZ and U, V are variable points on OX, OY respectively, where OX, OY, OZ are mutually orthogonal lines. Find the locus of a point P such that PU, PV, PC are mutually orthogonal.

MATHEMATICAL NOTES

EDITED BY E. F. BECKENBACH, University of California

Material for this department should be sent directly to E. F. Beckenbach, University of California, Los Angeles 24, California.

ON THE NUMBER OF PATHS IN A FINITE PARTIALLY ORDERED SET

E. W. CHITTENDEN, University of Iowa

Let P be a finite *partially ordered* system* with *initial* elements $a_1, a_2, \cdots, a_m$ and *terminal* elements $b_1, b_2, \cdots, b_n$. Let N be a matrix (x_{ij}), $(i=1, 2, \cdots, m;$ $j=1, 2, \cdots, n)$, where x_{ij} is the number of different *paths* from a_i to b_j, where a *path* is a *maximal* simply ordered subset of P which contains a_i and b_j. We show that the matrix N can be computed in terms of a series of incidence matrices† which we proceed to define. The initial elements of P, $a_1, \cdots, a_m$, are elements of *rank* zero. An element p of P is of rank 1 if it is not of rank zero and all its predecessors are of rank zero. In general an element p of P is of rank $r+1$ if it has a predecessor of rank r and no predecessor of higher rank. If p' is of rank r' and p'' of rank $r''>r'+1$, p'' is a successor of p', and there is no element p of P of rank $r'<r<r''$ between p' and p'', we agree that p'' may be counted among the ranks $r'<r<r''$ and that in passing from rank r to rank $r+1$, p'' is regarded as its own successor. Thus as there is actually only one path from p' to p'' in P, the convention just adopted permits us to admit the existence of a path from p' in rank r' to p'' in rank $r+1$ without actually increasing the total number of paths in the system.

The incidence matrix $A_r=(e_{ij})$ is defined by the rule: If p_{ir} is an element of P of rank r and is followed by $p_{j,r+1}$, then $e_{ij}=1$. Otherwise $e_{ij}=0$. Let k be the maximal rank of any element of P. Then the b_j are of rank k and N is the matrix product

$$N = \prod_{r=0}^{r=k} A_r.$$

The proof is easily made by induction. Evidently A_0 is the number of paths from elements of rank zero to their successors, and A_r is the number of paths from an element of rank r to an element of rank $r+1$. Hence if N_r is the matrix giving the number of paths from rank 0 to rank r, we see that the ith row of N_r will give the number of paths from a_i to each element p of rank r. The elements (e_{ij}) of A_r which are different from zero in a column give the incidences from an element of rank r to a particular element p_j of rank $r+1$. Thus the element x_{ij} of the product matrix $N_r \cdot A_r$ becomes the number of paths from a_i to p_j.

In the case of a checkerboard, the number of paths from one king row to the

---

* Garret Birkhoff, Lattice Theory, American Mathematical Society, 1940.

† O. Veblen, Analysis Situs, Colloquium Lectures, American Mathematical Society, 1916.

other is given by the matrix

$$\begin{pmatrix} 14 & 14 & 6 & 1 \\ 28 & 34 & 21 & 6 \\ 20 & 35 & 14 & 14 \\ 7 & 22 & 28 & 14 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Thus the number of paths, without jumps, from the second element of the starting king row to the third element of the ending king row is 21.

NOTE ON CONJUGATE HARMONIC FUNCTIONS

EDWARD KASNER, Columbia University
JOHN DE CICCO, Illinois Institute of Technology

In many textbooks on functions of a complex variable, the problem of finding a harmonic function $\psi(x, y)$ conjugate to a given harmonic function $\phi(x, y)$ is solved in the following manner. Since the functions ϕ and ψ are conjugate-harmonic, they obey the Cauchy-Riemann equations

$$\phi_x = \psi_y, \qquad \phi_y = -\psi_x, \tag{1}$$

and also each of the functions satisfies the Laplace equation, that is

$$\phi_{xx} + \phi_{yy} = 0, \qquad \psi_{xx} + \psi_{yy} = 0. \tag{2}$$

Hence the function ψ is found by integrating the equation

$$d\psi = -\phi_y dx + \phi_x dy, \tag{3}$$

which is exact since the given function ϕ is harmonic. Moreover all such functions ψ differ from one another merely by a real constant.

We shall show how to find all such functions ψ without resorting to integration. The advantage of our method is that it enables one to prove certain theorems concerning the conjugates of rational, algebraic, or entire harmonic functions.

In the first place, $\phi(x, y)$ is harmonic and hence is an analytic function of x and y. Therefore by the obvious relations, $u=x+iy$ and $v=x-iy$, we can substitute $x=(u+v)/2$ and $y=(u-v)/(2i)$ into this function. The result is

$$\phi(x, y) = \phi\left[\frac{u+v}{2}, \frac{u-v}{2i}\right] = \mu(v) + \lambda(u), \tag{4}$$

where $\mu(v)$ is an analytic function of v with coefficients the conjugates of the corresponding ones of the analytic function $\lambda(u)$.

Since we are searching for the second component $\psi(x, y)$ of the conformal transformation: $X=\phi(x, y)$, $Y=\psi(x, y)$, we know that $\phi+i\psi=2f(u)$ and $\phi-i\psi=2g(v)$, where $g(v)$ is an analytic function in v with coefficients the conjugates of the corresponding ones of the analytic function $f(u)$. Thus we have

$$\phi = g + f, \qquad \psi = i(g - f). \tag{5}$$

Comparing (4) and (5), we find

$$f = \lambda - ic/2, \qquad g = \mu + ic/2, \tag{6}$$

where c is a real constant. Therefore the solution for ψ is

$$\psi = i(\mu - \lambda) + c. \tag{7}$$

Thus from (7), the function ψ may be deduced immediately.

As an example, consider the problem of finding the conjugate of the harmonic function $\phi = x/(x^2+y^2)$. Performing the obvious substitutions, we find

$$\phi = x/[(x + iy)(x - iy)] = (u + v)/(2uv) = 1/(2v) + 1/(2u),$$

so that $\lambda = 1/(2u)$ and $\mu = 1/(2v)$. Substituting into (7), we have

$$\psi = (i/2)(1/v - 1/u) + c = i(u - v)/(2uv) + c = -y/(x^2 + y^2) + c.$$

The related analytic function is $\phi + i\psi = 1/u + ic$.

As another example, let us find the conjugate of the harmonic function $\phi = \text{arc tan } y/x$. First recall that arc tan $m = (1/2i) \log [(1+im)/(1-im)]$. Hence we have

$$\phi = \text{arc tan } y/x = (1/2i) \log [(x + iy)/(x - iy)] = (1/2i)(\log u - \log v).$$

Thus $\lambda = (1/2i) \log u$ and $\mu = (-1/2i) \log v$. By (7), we find

$$\psi = (-1/2)(\log u + \log v) + c = (-1/2) \log uv + c = -\log (x^2 + y^2)^{1/2} + c.$$

The related analytic function is $\phi + i\psi = -i \log u + ic$.

It is evident that the conjugate of a harmonic polynomial is also a harmonic polynomial. However it is not so obvious that the conjugate of a rational harmonic function is also rational.

The conjugate of a rational harmonic function is rational. Thus if one component of an analytic function is a rational function of (x, y), *then the analytic function is rational in* $u = x + iy$.

For if $\phi(x, y)$ is a rational function of (x, y), obeying the Laplace equation, it follows from (4) that $\lambda(u)$ and $\mu(v)$ are both rational functions. Hence by (7), it follows that ψ is rational also. Finally the function $\phi + i\psi$ is a rational function of $u = x + iy$.

The conjugate of an algebraic harmonic function is algebraic. Therefore an analytic function of $u = x + iy$ *is algebraic if only one component is given to be an algebraic function of* (x, y).

This result is also a consequence of (4) and (7).

Similarly the conjugate of an entire harmonic function is entire. Hence an analytic function of $u = x + iy$ *is entire if only one component is given to be an entire function of* (x, y).

For if $\phi(x, y)$ is an analytic function of (x, y) convergent for all finite values, then $\lambda(u)$ and $\mu(v)$ converge for all finite values of u and v. Hence by (7), $\psi(x, y)$ is an analytic function of (x, y) convergent for all finite values. Therefore $\phi + i\psi$ is an entire function of $u = x + iy$.

CLASSROOM NOTES

EDITED BY C. B. ALLENDOERFER, Haverford College

All material for this department should be sent to C. B. Allendoerfer, Haverford College, Haverford, Pennsylvania. Contributions are invited on topics of immediate interest to teachers of undergraduate mathematics.

END-POINT MAXIMA AND MINIMA

C. O. OAKLEY, Haverford College

It sometimes happens that a very elementary maximum-minimum problem will lead to seemingly impossible or even foolish results. The following examples are of this category and belong to the type commonly known as *end-point maxima*. They are of such simple nature that they may be readily assigned to a beginning class in the calculus.* Although not original, these two particular problems do not seem to be widely known and should prove to be both interesting and instructive to teachers and students alike.

PROBLEM I. *Find the position of the point $P(x, y)$, on an ellipse, such that the distance to a focus F is a maximum (minimum).*

Let the ellipse have the equation $b^2x^2+a^2y^2=a^2b^2$. Then the distance PF is a continuous function of x in the interval $(-a, a)$ and hence it has both a maximum and a minimum value. (Any function which is continuous in a closed finite interval possesses both a maximum value and a minimum value in that interval). Now the fortunate student, bright or dull, might begin to solve this problem as follows:

SOLUTION 1. Let the ellipse be represented parametrically by $x=a\cos\theta$, $y=b\sin\theta$ and let F be the right hand focus $(c, 0)$. Then

$$L \equiv \overline{PF}^2 = (a\cos\theta - c)^2 + b^2\sin^2\theta,$$

and

$$\frac{dL}{d\theta} = 2(a\cos\theta - c)(-a\sin\theta) + 2b^2\sin\theta\cos\theta = 0,$$

from which it follows that $\sin\theta=0$, or $\cos\theta=a/c$. The solutions of $\sin\theta=0$ yield the answers while $\cos\theta$ cannot equal a/c since $a/c>1$.

But even an able student might attack the problem differently—and come to grief.

SOLUTION 2. Now $PF=a-ex$. It's derivative is $-e\neq 0$. And yet $a-ex$ is obviously least when $x=a$ and greatest when $x=-a$, if the condition $-a\leqq x\leqq a$ is kept in mind. Even though the square of the distance is used, $L\equiv\overline{PF}^2=(a-ex)^2$, the unwary student is still in trouble for $dL/dx=-2e(a-ex)=0$ yields $x=a/e$, a point outside of the ellipse (on the directrix, indeed). The func-

* See J. L. Walsh, A Rigorous Treatment of the First Maximum Problem in the Calculus, this MONTHLY, vol. 54, (1947), pp. 35–36.

tion L *does* have a (relative) minimum at $x=a/e$ (what about the maximum?) but there is no (real) y-coördinate for the corresponding point P on the ellipse. Whether PF or $\overline{PF}^2$ is used, the end-points of the interval determine the (absolute) maximum and the (absolute) minimum values wanted.

Even the method that most beginning students are likely to employ will result in the same difficulty:

SOLUTION 3.

$$L \equiv \overline{PF}^2 = (x-c)^2 + y^2,$$

$$= (x-c)^2 + \frac{b^2}{a^2}(a^2 - x^2);$$

$$\frac{dL}{dx} = 2(x-c) - 2\frac{b^2}{a^2}x = 0,$$

or again,

$$x = a^2/c = a/e.$$

PROBLEM II. *A man is in a boat at P one mile from the nearest point A on shore. He wishes to go to B which is farther down the shore M miles from A. If he can row r miles an hour and walk w miles an hour, toward what point C should he row in order to reach B in least time?*

Usually this problem is given with simple numerical values that present no difficulty. The shore line is assumed to be straight; let $x=AC$. Then the total time t that it takes to go from A to B is readily determined as

$$t = \frac{1}{r}(1 + x^2)^{1/2} + \frac{1}{w}(M - x),$$

whence

$$\frac{dt}{dx} = \frac{x}{r}(1 + x^2)^{-1/2} - \frac{1}{w} = 0,$$

and

$$x = \frac{r}{\sqrt{w^2 - r^2}}.$$

The first astonishing thing about this "answer" is that it is independent of the distance M. If $r<w$ and if $r<M\sqrt{w^2-r^2}$, routine testing of the derivative will show that a minimum time is attained. But if $r<w$ and $r>M\sqrt{w^2-r^2}$, then the derivative vanishes for a value of x that lies outside of the interval AB and the problem has an end-point minimum, that is, the man should row directly toward B. Finally if $r \geqq w$, the man should again row directly to B.

Plotting the graphs of the functions involved in these problems is a great aid in clarifying the points at issue.

DISCUSSION. Problems involving end-point maxima and minima usually arise only when the independent variable is restricted to a certain interval in order to insure reality of the function or for certain physical reasons such as the avoidance of negative values of distance or time. In Problem I we found that the answers were either relative maxima and minima or end-point maxima and minima according to the particular choice of the independent variable. This is indeed a general situation: extreme values of the one type can be converted into those of the other type by an appropriate choice of a parameter or, what amounts to the same thing, by an appropriate transformation on the independent variable. Indeed let the function to be maximized be $y=f(x)$ and let the range of x be (a, b). Then put $x=a\cos^2\theta+b\sin^2\theta$. This transformation restricts x to the interval (a, b) but permits the new independent variable θ to vary from $-\infty$ to $+\infty$. It is readily seen that now $dy/d\theta=(dy/dx)2(b-a)\sin\theta\cos\theta$ which vanishes at $\theta=0$ and $\pi/2$, namely, at the points $x=a$ and $x=b$, as well as at any relative maxima and minima inside the interval (a, b). Applying this transformation to the above exercises will convert them into the usual relative maxima and minima problems. For example in Problem II if we set $x=M\sin^2\theta$, we find $dt/d\theta$ vanishes when $\sin\theta=0$, $\cos\theta=0$ and when $\sin^4\theta=r^2/M^2(w^2-r^2)$. An analysis of these values gives the results stated above.

If the interval is an infinite one, say (a, ∞), the transformation $x=a+\tan^2\theta$ will change an end-point maximum (minimum) at $x=a$ into a relative one.

Editorial Note. Another example of an end-point maximum has been submitted by V. L. Klee, Jr. of the University of Virginia. It is as follows:

PROBLEM. We are given a straight fence 100 feet long, and wish by adding 200 feet more to form a rectangular enclosure whose boundary contains the original fence. How shall this be done so as to enclose the greatest possible area?

Let x denote the length of new fence which is aligned with the original 100 feet of fence. Then the dimensions of the enclosure are $100+x$ and $50-x$, and its area $A(x)$ is $-x^2-50x+5000$. The student may reason as follows: $D_xA=-2(x+25)$; hence we would choose $x=-25$ in order to enclose the maximum area. He will then be perplexed to note that this solution obviously does not satisfy the conditions of the problem. The correct solution, of course, is $x=0$ which is an end-point maximum.

LETTERS TO THE EDITOR

The Trial Integral Method

The essential idea of the method explained in my note, *The Trial Integral Method*, this MONTHLY, vol. 34 (1947) pp. 159–160, is contained in a paper by T. H. Hildebrandt, Marginal Notes, this MONTHLY, vol. 36 (1929), pp. 216–221.

M. F. SMILEY
Northwestern University

The Equation of an Ellipse

In this MONTHLY for April (vol. 54 (1947) pp. 219–220) there appears a note by Frank Hawthorne in which the Cartesian equation of the ellipse with respect to its axes is derived, without the use of radicals, from the constancy of the sum of the focal radii. May I point out that the derivation of the equation of the ellipse in this manner appeared in 1707 in the posthumous *Traité analytique des sections coniques* (pp. 22–25) of the Marquis de L'Hospital. A concise account of this and other portions of the work of L'Hospital is given in J. L. Coolidge, *A history of the conic sections and quadric surfaces*, Oxford, 1945, p. 77.

C. B. BOYER
Brooklyn College

The Remainder Theorem

The basic ideas of the note by R. W. Wagner, *An Application of the Remainder Theorem*, this MONTHLY, vol. 54 (1947) p. 106, were contained in a lecture by L. C. Karpinski, "Mathematical Short Cuts for Engineers and Architects," published in a lithographed form by the Multi-Color Company of Detroit, Michigan in February 1930.

Karpinski extended this idea to make an interesting and pedagogically desirable connection with a common arithmetical concept ,the "check by nines." The proof of this arithmetical trick, taught usually by rule, if at all, follows, of course, from the fact that if, as in Wagner's note, $p(x)$ represents an integer conceived of as a polynomial in 10, then $p(1)$ is both the remainder if the number is divided by $x-1$, and the sum of the digits. In this case, $x-1$ is 9. The "check by casting out nines" then follows from the fact that if p, q, r are integers, then $(p+q+r)/9=p/9+q/9+r/9$ and hence the remainder of the sum should equal the sum of the remainders (with nines cast out). The extension of the check to the other fundamental operations of arithmetic is obvious.

Karpinski pointed out in his lecture that one may also derive checks by 11, 99, 101, and in a recent conversation he added that if the number is written as a polynomial in 1000 (e.g. $1{,}484{,}365=p(x)=x^2+484x+365$), then $p(-1)$ is the remainder after division by 1001 (in the example $p(-1)=-118$). Since $1001=7\cdot 11\cdot 13$, the divisibility of the remainder by any of these factors is necessary and sufficient to show the divisibility of the original integer.

P. S. JONES
University of Michigan

Linear Differential Equations

The purpose of these remarks is to express the opinion that the note *On the Solution of Linear Differential Equations* in this MONTHLY, vol. 54 (1947) p. 160 is in violation of (a) sound mathematics (b) sound pedagogy (c) sound common sense

I will briefly restate the author's thesis, using his first example, the equation

$$y'' - 2y' + y = e^{ax}.$$

He sets down the general solution, and observes that as it stands it is not valid when $a=1$, containing as it does a denominator $(a-1)^2$. He then rigs a special form which when a approaches unity does not become infinite but is indeterminate, and naïvely assumes that the limit of this expression is the solution when $a=1$. This is to assume the validity of a theorem which certainly has not been proved at this stage of the game, namely, that if a solution of $f(x, y, y', a)=0$ is bounded, it is a continuous function of a. The result, in the case before us, happens to be correct, but the process is unjustifiable.

What does the conscientious mathematician do when a general result becomes meaningless in a special case? He does not try to patch it up by ingenuity but goes back to the original problem and works it through. In this instance whether or not we like to use the symbolic operator D, we have a well-defined process for solving linear equations with constant coefficients, namely the repetition of the relationship:

$$\text{If} \qquad y' - ay = f(x), \qquad y = e^{ax}\left[\int e^{-ax} f(x)\,dx + c\right].$$

Direct application of this rule yields easily the desired solution of the equation $y''-2ay''+a^2y=e^{ax}$ in a neat and simple form.

Pedagogically, the operations which I suggest are straightforward and direct. The author remarks that the usual methods seem to involve pulling something out of thin air, but it seems to me that on the contrary his method involves pulling a rabbit out of a previously prepared hat. What student could see the sense in setting up his peculiar form of the general solution, or would understand it well enough to be able to handle another similar situation? The process which I suggest, on the other hand, goes back to sound and well-established principles. This argument leads naturally and logically to my third point, sound mathematics and pedagogy are bound up with common sense. We attack any given problem on its own merits, not as an offshoot of some other problem.

R. A. JOHNSON
Brooklyn College

ELEMENTARY PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS

EDITED BY HOWARD EVES, Oregon State College

Send all communications concerning Elementary Problems and Solutions to Howard Eves, Mathematics Department, Oregon State College, Corvallis, Oregon. This department welcomes problems believed to be new, and demanding no tools beyond those ordinarily furnished in the first two years of college mathematics. To facilitate their consideration, solutions should be submitted on separate, signed sheets, within three months after publication of problems.

PROBLEMS FOR SOLUTION

E 781. *Proposed by P. D. Thomas, Navy Department, Washington, D.C.*

A heavy ball is gently dropped into a vase full of water. A section through the vertical axis of the vase is a semiellipse, the height being the semimajor axis, the diameter being then the minor axis. The size of the ball is such as to cause the maximum displacement. (1) Find the radius of the ball. (2) Show that the plane of the circle of tangency bisects the height of the submerged segment of the ball. (See E 687 [1946, 334].)

E 782. *Proposed by Joseph Rosenbaum, The Milford School, Connecticut*

Show that the product of two numbers each of the form $x^2+kxy+y^2$, where k, x, y are integers, k fixed, is also of that form. If x and y are relatively prime, are all factors of $x^2+kxy+y^2$ also of the same form?

E 783. *Proposed by C. D. Olds, San Jose State College*

Given a parallelogram and its diagonals. Let each side of the parallelogram be divided into n equal parts and let lines be drawn through the points of division, parallel to the sides and to the diagonals of the parallelogram. Find the total number of triangles in the resulting figure.

E 784. *Proposed by R. E. Gaines, University of Richmond*

Show that the locus of the intersection of two successive perpendicular tangents to a logarithmic spiral is another logarithmic spiral.

E 785. *Proposed by R. J. Walker, Cornell University*

Each of $n-1$ tanks, $T_1, \cdots, T_{n-1}$, holds V gallons of water, and an nth tank, T_n, holds V gallons of a salt solution containing M pounds of salt. Liquid is circulated at the rate of g gallons per minute from T_n to T_{n-1}, T_{n-1} to T_{n-2}, $\cdots$, T_2 to T_1, T_1 to T_n. How much salt is in T_n after t minutes?

SOLUTIONS

E 743, Solution II [1947, 285]. *Correction.* In the third line of the solution the word "positive" should be replaced by "negative."

A Cryptarithm

E 751 [1947, 38]. *Proposed by Alan Wayne, Flushing, N. Y.*

Find the digits represented by the letters in the following addition, if no two

different letters represent the same digit:

$$\begin{array}{r} FORTY \\ TEN \\ TEN \\ \hline SIXTY \end{array}$$

Solution by A. Chulick, Hofstra College. Since the sum of column (1), (right to left), is Y and no digit can be carried, N is zero. Likewise, since the sum of column (2) is T, or T plus 10, E is either zero or five. But N is zero; therefore E is five. A digit must be carried from column (4). That digit is 1, for the sum of column (4) can be at most 11. It follows that I is either zero or one. But N is zero; therefore I is one, and O is nine. The sum of column (3) must be at least 21, for X cannot be either zero or one, and at most 1 can be carried from column (2); hence T must be either seven or eight. If T is seven R must be eight and X three. But F and S are consecutive digits. The only possibilities are two and three, and three and four; therefore X cannot be three. T must be eight, R seven, and X four. The only consecutive digits available are two and three; hence F is two and S is three. Y is six. The solution is unique and we have $29786+850+850=31486$.

Also solved by Richard Andree, Maurice Anthony, LeRoy Babcock, Murray Barbour, T. E. Berry, Daniel Block, R. A. Bradley, W. G. Brady, Paul Brock, W. E. Buker, M. I. Chernofsky, P. L. Chessin, W. H. Coulter, R. E. Crane, J. A. Cromelin, J. H. Cross, J. E. Darraugh, E. de la Garza, Monte Dernham, William Douglas, R. L. Duncan, Virginia Felder, J. H. Ferguson, Barkley Fritz, I. M. Gardoff, M. A. Geisler, E. St. John Gough, E. L. Harp, Jr., R. H. Hoskins, J. M. Kingston, Mrs. V. L. Klee, Jr., William Kruskal, Elmer Latshaw, H. N. Leifer, G. E. McAllister, Burnett Meyer, Leo Moser, Roger Osborn, S. T. Parker, C. R. Perisho, C. F. Pinzka, P. A. Pisa, A. O. Qualley, P. W. A. Raine, A. P. Rhodes, G. G. Roberts, E. D. Schell, David Sohn, G. W. Walker, Davis Wellinger, Hazel Schoonmaker Wilson, M. S. Constable and the proposer.

Editorial Note. Problems of this nature are appropriately called *cryptarithms*, and constitute a special class of the more general problems known as *arithmetical restorations*. See Ball-Coxeter, *Mathematical Recreations and Essays*, pp. 20–26 and Kraitchik, *Mathematical Recreations*, pp. 79–80. Although the above problem is easy, cryptarithms can be very difficult. Devotees, however, prefer *charming* cryptarithms, and to be charming a cryptarithm should (1) make sense in the given letters as well as the solved digits, (2) involve all the digits, (3) have a unique solution, and (4) be such that it can be broken by logic, without recourse to trial and error. Judged by these standards the above cryptarithm is very charming indeed.

The proposer has composed a number of these cryptarithms, some of which have appeared in *The Cryptogram*, publication of the American Cryptogram Association. Thus he has offered $SEVEN+SEVEN+SIX=TWENTY$ (unique

solution), $SEVEN+THREE+TWO=TWELVE$ (unfortunately possessing two solutions, since N and O may be interchanged), $TWENTY+FIFTY+NINE+ONE=EIGHTY$ (unique solution but requiring an undesirable amount of trial and error), $SCAN+THESE=DIGITS$ (unique solution), and $RODE+MAIL+ADDED+EMBLEM=OFFERED$ (having, as a literary accessory, the key word *FORMIDABLE*, whose successive letters correspond to the ordered set of digits $0, 1, \cdots, 9$).

Dernham and McAllister both suggested that if anyone wants more, let him $SEND+MORE=MONEY$.

Of the proposed problem W. H. Coulter wrote:

"Two sums that oddly cleave as one
Though far apart like Earth and Sun."

Two Six-Point Circles Associated with a Right Triangle

E 752 [1947, 38]. *Proposed by Victor Thébault, Tennie, Sarthe, France*

Show that in a right triangle the twelve points of contact of the inscribed and escribed circles form two groups of six points situated on two circles which cut each other orthogonally at the points of intersection of the circumcircle with the line joining the midpoints of the legs of the triangle.

Solution by J. H. Butchart, Arizona State College. Let ABC be the right triangle, C the vertex of the right angle, and let X, Y, Z be the points of contact of the incircle with the sides a, b, c opposite the vertices A, B, C respectively. Let X_1, X_2, X_3 be the points of contact of the escribed circles opposite A, B, C respectively with side a, and similarly define Y_i and Z_i. Let P, Q be the points where the line bisecting a, b at A', B' meets the circumcircle. Then, using the relations like $AZ=s-a$, $BX_3=s-a$, where s is the semi-perimeter of triangle ABC, we can show that the sets of points P, Y, Q, Y_3; P, X Q, X_3; X, X_3, Y_3, Y are concyclic. For instance, $(PA')(A'Q)=(CA')(A'B)=a^2/4=(XA')(A'X_3)$. Since XX_3, YY_3 meet at C, which is not on PQ, it is impossible for circles $(PYQY_3)$ and $(PXQX_3)$ to be distinct. Similarly Z_1, Z_2 lie on circle (XX_3Y_3Y) and the center is the intersection of the perpendicular bisectors of XY and Z_1Z_2, *i.e.*, an end, K', of the diameter of the circumcircle perpendicular to AB. The points Z, Z_3, X_1, Q, Y_1, X_2, P, Y_2 are proved concyclic in a similar manner, and K, the other end of the diameter through K', is proved the center of this circle by showing that KQ and KZ are equal. Since the radii KQ, $K'Q$ of the two circles are perpendicular, the circles are orthogonal.

Also solved by the proposer.

Editorial Note. It is believed that the two six-point circles of this problem are new in the geometry of the right triangle.

The Elliptical Race Track

E 753 [1947, 38]. *Proposed by L. M. Kelly, University of Missouri*

How can one convince a class in elementary analytics that if the inside of a

race track is a non-circular ellipse, and the track is of constant width, then the outside is not an ellipse?

I. *Solution by Murray Barbour, Michigan State College.* Let the equation of the inside of the track be

$$x^2/a^2 + y^2/b^2 = 1, \qquad a \neq b.$$

If the track is of uniform width and the outside *is* an ellipse, its equation would have to be

$$x^2/(a+t)^2 + y^2/(b+t)^2 = 1, \qquad t \neq 0.$$

At any point of these two ellipses where the slope of the tangent is m, the width of the track will be

$$\frac{\{(a+t)^2m^2 + (b+t)^2\}^{1/2} - \{a^2m^2 + b^2\}^{1/2}}{(m^2+1)^{1/2}} = t. \tag{1}$$

After expanding and simplifying, this equation becomes

$$t(am^2 + b) = t\{(m^2+1)(a^2m^2 + b^2)\}^{1/2}.$$

Since $t \neq 0$, both sides may be divided by t. Further simplification then gives

$$2abm^2 = m^2(a^2 + b^2).$$

Since this must be an identity for all values of m, we find

$$a^2 - 2ab + b^2 = 0,$$

or $a = b$, contrary to our original hypothesis. Thus the outside of the track is *not* an ellipse.

II. *Solution by Leo Moser, University of Toronto.* Assuming the inside and outside curves of the track to be the ellipses of Solution I, we note that the point $A(a/\sqrt{2}, b/\sqrt{2})$ lies on the inner ellipse and the point $B((a+t)/\sqrt{2}, (b+t)/\sqrt{2})$ lies on the outer ellipse. Now the distance between A and B is t. However, there is a shorter distance between the curves, for the slope of the line joining A to B is 1, while the slope of the tangent to the first ellipse, at the point A, is $-b/a \neq -1$. Thus we have a contradiction which proves the theorem.

Also solved by R. A. Bradley, M. A. Geisler, E. G. Goman, and L. S. Shively.

Shively obtained relation (1) above and suggested that one way to convince a class that the left member does not always equal t is to substitute the special values $a=4$, $b=3$, $t=1$, $m=1$. Goman remarked that a class may be convinced that the inside and outside of an oval track of constant width t cannot always both be ellipses by taking the outside of the track as an ellipse, and then considering the inside curve for t greater than the semi-minor axis of the outside curve. The inside curve clearly intersects itself, and thus cannot be an ellipse.

Editorial Note. A curve, which is at a constant distance along the normal

from another curve C, is called *a parallel* to C. A curve and any of its parallels have the same normals and the same evolute. The parallel curves of a non-circular ellipse are curves of the eighth degree. See, *e.g.*, Ex. 3, art. 372, of Salmon's *Conic Sections*. R. C. Yates has devised a linkage for describing curves parallel to an ellipse. See this MONTHLY [1938, 607].

Skew Ordered Sequences

E 754 [1947, 39 and 1947, 163.] *Proposed by S. T. Thompson, Tacoma, Wash.*

A finite sequence of positive integers will be said to be *skew ordered* if either each integer in an even position of the sequence is greater than or each such integer is less than its immediate neighbors. If the eight integers $1, \cdots, 8$ are placed in random order in a sequence, what is the probability that the sequence will be skew ordered?

I. *Solution by J. B. Kelly, Hampton, Va.* Let Q_n be the number of skew ordered arrangements of n distinct integers. There is no loss in generality in supposing that the integers are $1, 2, \cdots, n$. Suppose that the integer n occurs in the kth position. If we have a skew ordered arrangement, the sequences on either side of n must be skew ordered. The sequence to the left of n must have its last element less than its next to last element. Once the integers in this sequence are chosen, its elements may be arranged in $\frac{1}{2}Q_{k-1}$ different ways so as to satisfy this condition. The sequence to the right of n must have its first element less than its second element. Once the integers in this sequence are chosen, its elements may be arranged in $\frac{1}{2}Q_{n-k}$ different ways so as to satisfy this condition. There are $\binom{n-1}{k-1}$ ways of choosing the integers in the sequence to the left of n and once these integers are chosen, the integers in the sequence to the right of n are determined. Thus the number of skew ordered permutations of n distinct integers for which the greatest integer (here n) occurs in the kth position is $\frac{1}{4}\binom{n-1}{k-1}Q_{k-1}Q_{n-k}$. It follows that

$$Q_n = \frac{1}{4}\sum_{k=1}^{n}\binom{n-1}{k-1}Q_{k-1}Q_{n-k}. \tag{1}$$

In applying this formula, it is necessary to make the convention that $Q_0 = Q_1 = 2$. Let P_n be the probability that a given permutation of n distinct integers will be skew ordered. Evidently $P_n = Q_n/n!$, and relation (1) becomes

$$P_n = \frac{1}{4n}\sum_{k=1}^{n} P_{k-1}P_{n-k}, \tag{2}$$

where again we make the convention that $P_0 = P_1 = 2$. Calculating P_8 by successively calculating $P_2, P_3, \cdots, P_7$ by means of (2) we obtain $P_8 = 277/4032$.

II. *Solution by Frederick Mosteller, Harvard University.* The probability

that a finite sequence of n unequal integers will be skew ordered when all permutations are equally likely can be translated directly into statistical terminology. It is the probability that the sequence will have no *run up* or *run down* of length greater than or equal to 2. This problem was treated by P. S. Olmstead, *Distribution of sample arrangements for runs up and down*. Annals of Mathematical Statistics, vol. 17 (1946), pp. 24–33.

For $n=3$ to 14 we derive from Olmstead's Table 2

n	Probability of skew ordering
3	0.66666667
4	0.41666667
5	0.26666667
6	0.16944444
7	0.10793651
8	0.06870040
9	0.04373898
10	0.02784447
11	0.01772647
12	0.01128499
13	0.00718426
14	0.00457364

Since for n even the number of arrangements with runs of length no more than one is just twice Euler's number E_n, and for n odd the number of arrangements is twice the tangent number, we might use the approximation

$$4\left(\frac{2}{\pi}\right)^{n+1}.$$

(See, *e.g.*, Milne-Thompson, *Calculus of Finite Differences*, p. 147.)

For $n=4$ this approximation agrees to 0.002, for $n=6$ to 0.0001, for $n=8$ to 0.000003, and for $n=9$ to 0.000001. The exact answer for $n=8$ is 277/4032.

ADVANCED PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS

EDITED BY E. P. STARKE, Rutgers University

Send all communications concerning Advanced Problems and Solutions to E. P. Starke, Rutgers University, New Brunswick, New Jersey. All manuscripts should be typewritten, with double spacing and with margins at least one inch wide. Problems containing results believed to be new or extensions of old results are especially sought. Proposers of problems should also enclose any solutions or information that will assist the editor. In general, problems in well known text books or results found in readily accessible sources should not be proposed for this department.

PROBLEMS FOR SOLUTION

4259. *Proposed by Richard Bellman, Princeton University*

If

$$\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \frac{n_k x^{n_k}}{1+x^{n_k}} = x\prod_{k=1}^{\infty}(1+x^{n_k}), \qquad |x|<1,$$

show that, except perhaps for order,

$$n_k = 2^k.$$

4260. *Proposed by Victor Thébault, Tennie, Sarthe, France*

In a triangle ABC inscribe two triangles $A_1B_1C_1$ and $A_2B_2C_2$ whose sides are parallel to the medians. Show that (1) the triangles ABC, $A_1B_1C_1$, $A_2B_2C_2$, have the same centroid and the same Brocard angle; (2) the triangles $A_1B_1C_1$, $A_2B_2C_2$ are inscribed in an ellipse concentric and homothetic to the inscribed Steiner ellipse, the ratio of homothety being $1/\sqrt{3}$.

4261. *Proposed by F. J. Dyson, Trinity College, Cambridge, England*

The number of partitions of an integer n into a sum of positive integral parts is denoted by $p(n)$. The result of subtracting the number of parts in a partition from the largest part is a positive or negative integer called the rank of the partition. Ramanujan proved that $p(5n+4)$ is always divisible by 5, and $p(7n+5)$ by 7. Show that the number of partitions of $5n+4$ whose ranks are congruent modulo 5 to a given residue is the same whichever of the five residues is chosen, and the number of partitions of $7n+5$ whose ranks are congruent modulo 7 to a given residue is the same whichever of the seven residues is chosen.

4262. *Proposed by L. A. Santaló, Rosario, Argentina*

Let C be a rectifiable plane curve of length L, contained within a given circle of radius R. Prove that there is a circle of radius $\rho \geqq R$ which cuts C in n points, where

$$n \geqq L/\pi R. \tag{1}$$

In particular there is a line which cuts C in n points, where n satisfies (1). If

$\rho < R$, the inequality (1) must be replaced by

$$n \geqq \frac{4L\rho}{\pi(R+\rho)^2}. \tag{2}$$

See L. A. Santaló, A theorem and an inequality referring to rectifiable curves, *American Journal of Mathematics*, 1941, p. 635.

4263. *Proposed by Howard Eves, Oregon State College, and Paul Halmos, Syracuse University*

Criticize the following alleged proof of the continuum hypothesis.

Let X be the set of all infinite sequences of 0's and 1's, and let E be an arbitrary uncountable subset of X. Corresponding to any finite sequence, $\{a_1, \cdots, a_k\}$, of 0's and 1's, write $E(a_1, \cdots, a_k)$ for the set of all sequences $\{x_n\}$ which belong to E and begin with $\{a_1, \cdots, a_k\}$. Since $E = E(0) + E(1)$, at least one of the two sets $E(0)$ and $E(1)$ is uncountable; write $a_1 = 0$ or 1 according as $E(0)$ is or is not uncountable. Then, in either case, $E(a_1)$ is uncountable. If a_i has already been defined for $i = 1, \cdots, k$, so that $E(a_1, \cdots, a_k)$ is uncountable, then write $a_{k+1} = 0$, or 1 according as $E(a_1, \cdots, a_k, 0)$ is or is not uncountable. The resulting infinite sequence $\{a_1, a_2, a_3, \cdots\}$ has the property that for any k it is true that $E(a_1, \cdots, a_k)$ is uncountable. Write E^* for the union of all $E(a_1, \cdots, a_k)$, for $k = 1, 2, 3, \cdots$; then E^* is a subset (in fact an uncountable subset) of E.

For certain positive integers k it is true that both $E(a_1, \cdots, a_k, 0)$ and $E(a_1, \cdots, a_k, 1)$ are uncountable; in fact this must happen for an infinite number of k's. (Otherwise, for a sufficiently large k, $E(a_1, \cdots, a_k)$ would not be uncountable, contrary to its construction.) Let $k_1, k_2, k_3, \cdots$ be the integers for which this is true, and write, for any $\{x_1, x_2, x_3, \cdots\}$ in E^*,

$$y_n = x_{k_n+1};$$

then $\{y_1, y_2, \cdots\}$ is an infinite sequence of 0's and 1's. From the way in which the k_n are defined it follows that every possible sequence of 0's and 1's occurs as a y sequence, and that consequently the sequences $\{x_1, x_2, \cdots\}$ in E^* correspond (in possibly a many to one manner) to a set (viz. the set of all y sequences) having the power of the continuum. It follows that the cardinal number of E^* (and hence of E) cannot be less, and since E is a subset of X it cannot be greater. In other words it has been proved that every uncountable subset of a set having the power of the continuum has also the power of the continuum.

4248 [1947, 232], corrected. *Proposed by Victor Thébault, Tennie, Sarthe, France*

Having given a tetrahedron $ABCD$, place a sphere (S) of given radius in such a manner that the volume of the polar tetrahedron of $ABCD$ with respect to (S) will be a relative minimum.

SOLUTIONS

A Configuration of n Spheres

3895 [1938, 631]. *Proposed by Victor Thébault, Tennie, Sarthe, France*

Four spheres (ω_1), (ω_2), (ω_3), (ω_4) pass respectively through the vertices A_1, A_2, A_3, A_4 of a tetrahedron and intersect in pairs on the corresponding edges. Straight lines A_5A_1, A_5A_2, A_5A_3, A_5A_4 which join an arbitrary point A_5 to the vertices of the tetrahedron cut the respective spheres again in $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \alpha_3, \alpha_4$ and these four points with A_5 lie on a sphere (ω_5). Continuing in this way, the lines $A_nA_1, A_nA_2, \cdots, A_nA_{n-1}$ which join an arbitrary point A_n to the points of a preceding set $A_1, A_2, \cdots, A_{n-1}$ cut the respective spheres $(\omega_1), (\omega_2), \cdots, (\omega_{n-1})$ in the points $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \cdots, \alpha_{n-1}$ which with A_n lie on a sphere (ω_n). (1) Show that the spheres $(\omega_1), (\omega_2), \cdots, (\omega_n)$ meet in a point P. (2) Show that the points diametrically opposite to $A_1, A_2, \cdots, A_n$ on the corresponding spheres lie in a plane through P.

Note by Proposer. The part (2) is an extension of a theorem by Bouvaist-Delens, *Annales de la Société Scientifique de Bruxelles*, 1937, p. 159.

*Solution by the Proposer.** (1). A solution of this first part has already been given for $n=5$ (this MONTHLY, 3819 [1939, 239]). The same reasoning extended by adding one more point at a time shows that the spheres $(\omega_1), (\omega_2), \cdots, (\omega_n)$ meet in a point P common to the first four spheres.

(2) To solve the second part it is convenient to establish a preliminary

THEOREM. *If three spheres $(\omega_1), (\omega_2), (\omega_3)$ pass respectively through the vertices A_1, A_2, A_3 of a triangle $A_1A_2A_3$, intersect in pairs on A_1A_2, A_2A_3, A_3A_1, and have in common a point P not in the plane of triangle $A_1A_2A_3$, then the point P and the points A_1', A_2', A_3' diametrically opposite A_1, A_2, A_3 on the given spheres are coplanar.*

The plane $A_1A_2A_3$ cuts the spheres $(\omega_1), (\omega_2), (\omega_3)$ in three circles $(E_1), (E_2), (E_3)$, which have a common point P'.† The points A_1', A_2', A_3' diametrically opposite A_1, A_2, A_3 on $(\omega_1), (\omega_2), (\omega_3)$ project orthogonally on the plane $A_1A_2A_3$ into points a_1', a_2', a_3' diametrically opposite A_1, A_2, A_3 on $(E_1), (E_2), (E_3)$. The triangle $a_1'a_2'a_3'$ has its sides perpendicular to the corresponding sides of triangle $A_1A_2A_3$. The sides $A_2'A_3'$, $A_3'A_1'$, $A_1'A_2'$ of triangle $A_1'A_2'A_3'$ are therefore perpendicular to the homologous sides A_2A_3, A_3A_1, A_1A_2 of triangle $A_1A_2A_3$.

Likewise the orthogonal projections a_1'', a_2'', a_3'' of A_1, A_2, A_3 on the plane $A_1'A_2'A_3'$ coincide with the points diametrically opposite A_1', A_2', A_3' on the circles $(E_1'), (E_2'), (E_3')$ cut by this plane from the spheres $(\omega_1), (\omega_2), (\omega_3)$. The sides of $a_1''a_2''a_3''$, perpendicular to the corresponding sides of $A_1'A_2'A_3'$, intersect (E_1'), (E_2'), (E_3') on $A_2'A_3'$, $A_3'A_1'$, $A_1'A_2'$. These three circles meet in the point P, which is the second point of intersection of the spheres $(\omega_1), (\omega_2), (\omega_3)$

* Translation by W. E. Byrne, Virginia Military Institute.

† R. A. Johnson, Modern Geometry, 1929, Art. 184.

since P is not in the plane $A_1A_2A_3$. The theorem is thus proved.

The solution of (2) is merely a corollary. By the Miquel-Roberts theorem* the four spheres (ω_1), (ω_2), (ω_3), (ω_4) of the present problem have in common a point P. The points A_1', A_2', A_3', A_4' diametrically opposite A_1, A_2, A_3, A_4 on (ω_1), (ω_2), (ω_3), (ω_4) are in the same plane (π) passing through P, since the points (A_1', A_2', A_3', P), (A_2', A_3', A_4', P), (A_3', A_4', A_1', P), (A_4', A_1', A_2', P) are coplanar by our preliminary theorem.

The lines A_5A_1, A_5A_2, A_5A_3, A_5A_4 intersect (ω_1), (ω_2), (ω_3), (ω_4) respectively in α_1, α_2, α_3, α_4. By the Miquel-Roberts theorem applied to the tetrahedron $A_5A_2A_3A_4$, the spheres $A_5\alpha_2\alpha_3\alpha_4$, (ω_2), (ω_3), (ω_4) meet at P. Hence the point A_5' diametrically opposite A_5 on the sphere $(\omega_5) \equiv A_5\alpha_2\alpha_3\alpha_4$ is in the plane (π). Step by step it is clear that the points $A_6', \cdots, A_n'$ diametrically opposite to $A_6, \cdots, A_n$ on $(\omega_6), \cdots, (\omega_n)$ are also in the plane (π).

Note. Part (2) generalizes an interesting theorem due to R. Bouvaist, who obtained it by analytical means. It was proved also in various ways by P. Delens.† The reasoning may be extended step by step to the polygon $A_1'A_2' \cdots A_n'$ to prove part (2). The theorem is:

Given a tetrahedron $A_1A_2A_3A_4$ and four spheres (ω_1), (ω_2), (ω_3), (ω_4) passing respectively through A_1, A_2, A_3, A_4 and intersecting in pairs on the corresponding adjacent edges, these spheres have a point P in common (S. Roberts), and the points A_1', A_2', A_3', A_4', diametrically opposite to A_1, A_2, A_3, A_4 on the spheres (ω_1), (ω_2), (ω_3), (ω_4) are in a plane passing through P.

A Theorem on the Tetrahedron

4150 [1945, 102]. *Proposed by Victor Thébault, Tennie, Sarthe, France*

In a tetrahedron $ABCD$ with the orthocenter H, the perpendiculars at A to the faces ACD, ABD, ABC meet respectively the planes HCD, HBD, HBC in (A_1, A_2, A_3), and similarly for the points (B_1, B_2, B_3), and so on. Show that the planes $A_1A_2A_3$, $B_1B_2B_3$, $\cdots$, are perpendicular to the medians of $ABCD$.

A solution will be found in the Proposer's article, *Tetrahedrons having a common face*, p. 395, this issue of the MONTHLY.

Barycentric Coördinates

4192 [1946, 103]. *Proposed by Victor Thébault, Tennie, Sarthe, France*

For a given tetrahedron $A_1A_2A_3A_4$, if P is the centroid of its antipedal tetrahedron $ABCD$, its barycentric coördinates are inversely proportional to the squares of its distances to A_1, A_2, A_3, A_4; and conversely.

---

* J. L. Coolidge, *A Treatise on the Circle and the Sphere*, 1916, p. 240. The priority of the theorem usually attributed to S. Roberts, seems to belong to Miquel, who gave an elementary demonstration of it in 1838 (Journal de Liouville, t. III, p. 522, theorem VI). Miquel obtained it by a stereographic projection.

† P. Delens, Ann. de la Soc. Scient. de Bruxelles, 1937, p. 159.

Solution by R. Goormaghtigh, Bruges, Belgium. The following generalization will be proved: *Let $A_1A_2A_3A_4$ be a tetrahedron and $B_1B_2B_3B_4$ the antipedal tetrahedron of an arbitrary point P; if $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \alpha_3, \alpha_4$ and $\beta_1, \beta_2, \beta_3, \beta_4$ are the barycentric coördinates of P as to $A_1A_2A_3A_4$ and as to $B_1B_2B_3B_4$, then the ratios $\beta_1/\alpha_1, \beta_2/\alpha_2, \beta_3/\alpha_3, \beta_4/\alpha_4$ are proportional to the squares of the distances PA_1, PA_2, PA_3, PA_4.*

The volume of the tetrahedron $PA_2A_3A_4$ is

$$\tfrac{1}{6}PA_2 \cdot PA_3 \cdot PA_4 \sin (P - A_2A_3A_4).$$

Further, the areas $\sigma_1, \cdots$ of the faces $B_2B_3B_4, \cdots$ are proportional to the sines of the supplements to the solid angles $(B_1-B_2B_3B_4), \cdots$. But the solid angle $(P-A_2A_3A_4)$ is the supplement to $(B_1-B_2B_3B_4)$, and so on. Hence $\alpha_1, \cdots$ are proportional to $\sigma_1/PA_1, \cdots$ and to $\beta_1/\overline{PA_1}^2, \cdots$; and this proves the theorem. The Proposer's theorem is an immediate corollary.

It follows also that the products $\alpha_1\beta_1, \alpha_2\beta_2, \alpha_3\beta_3, \alpha_4\beta_4$ are proportional to the squares of the faces of the tetrahedron $B_1B_2B_3B_4$.

Collinear Orthopoles

4195 [1946, 160]. *Proposed by R. Goormaghtigh, Bruges, Belgium*

There are ten ways to divide six points on a circle into two groups of three so as to form pairs of triangles having no common vertex. The midpoints of the segments joining the orthopoles of a given straight line with respect to each pair of triangles are ten collinear points.

Solution by Ou Li, Yenching University, Peiping, China. Let the given circle be the unit circle and let t_i $(i=1, 2, \cdots, 6)$ be the complex coördinates of the six points A_i on it. Denote the elementary symmetric functions of, say, t_1, t_2, t_3 by s_j^{123} $(j=1, 2, 3)$; and those of $t_1, t_2, \cdots, t_6$ by σ_k $(k=1, 2, \cdots, 6)$. The given straight line has an equation in the form

$$\frac{x}{a} + \frac{\bar{x}}{\bar{a}} = 1$$

where a is constant. The orthopoles of this line with respect to the triangles $A_1A_2A_3$, $A_4A_5A_6$ are, respectively,*

$$x_{123} = \frac{1}{2}\left(a + s_1^{123} + \frac{\bar{a}}{a} s_3^{123}\right), \qquad x_{456} = \frac{1}{2}\left(a + s_1^{456} + \frac{\bar{a}}{a} s_3^{456}\right).$$

The midpoint of these two orthopoles will be

$$M = \frac{1}{4}\left[2a + \sigma_1 + \frac{\bar{a}}{a}(s_3^{123} + s_3^{456})\right].$$

Now let M' be the analogous midpoint for the triangles $A_1A_2A_4$ and $A_3A_5A_6$.

* See for instance R. Goormaghtigh, A Study of a Quadrilateral Inscribed in a Circle, this MONTHLY 1942, p. 178.

The clinant of the line MM' becomes

$$\frac{M - M'}{\overline{M} - \overline{M'}} = \left(\frac{\bar{a}}{a}\right)^2 \sigma_6.$$

Since this is symmetric in the t_i, it is evident that all the ten midpoints are collinear.

Solved also by H. E. Fettis and the Proposer.

Isosceles n-Points

4254 [1947, 345]. *Proposed by Paul Erdös, Syracuse University*

We have seven points in the plane. Prove that we can always select three which do not form an isosceles triangle. For six points this does not necessarily hold. (If A, B, C are on a line we can define that they do not form an isosceles triangle if $AB \neq BC$.)

Editorial Note. This is essentially the same as the Proposer's problem E 735 [1947, 227–229], which see for solution and comments.

RECENT PUBLICATIONS

EDITED BY H. P. EVANS, University of Wisconsin

All books for review should be sent directly to the editor of this department, American Mathematical Monthly, 531 West 116th Street, New York 27, N. Y., and not to any of the other editors or officers of the Association.

An Introduction to Mathematical Genetics. By Lancelot Hogben. New York, W. W. Norton and Co., 1946. 12+260 pages. $5.00

Genetical theories and various breeding practices lead to pleasing mathematical problems. They have intrigued abstract algebraists to construct special "genetic algebras," and some of the recurrence relations and functional equations describing the genetical structure of succeeding generations have not yet been solved. Readers of this MONTHLY will be more interested in the fact that genetical theories provide perhaps the easiest and best accessible examples illustrating how even very elementary mathematical reasoning leads to interesting insights and applications. It is a fairly common practice to use the Mendelian laws as a first application for the elementary rules of combining probabilities. The equally elementary and intuitive applications of simple difference and other recurrence equations, of matrix computation, and so forth, are less known. Mathematicians, and in particular mathematics teachers, will, therefore, greet a book on mathematical genetics with great interest.

Unfortunately, the book under review will disappoint them inasmuch as it is clearly not intended for them. It is written for students of biology and practical

breeders who have difficulties with simple fractions but wish to understand the results of a quantitative analysis of breeding systems, of mutations, selection, and so forth. Accordingly, the choice of material, though natural and justified, is not ideal from the peculiar point of view of the mathematician. The mathematical tools and ideas are hidden so far as possible and the access to the book is made difficult by the standard practice in genetics of using as many technical terms as possible and not defining a single one. It is possible that students of biology would be acquainted with these terms long before they desire to consult Hogben's book. Nevertheless, one page of explanations would have opened the book to many other readers.

As has been indicated, the book relies on most elementary methods. An integral, a differential, and a statistical test of significance occur once or twice, but in a way calculated not to disturb a reader familiar only with simple algebra. All probability considerations are translated into the language of mixing and selecting cards. The notion of a sequence u_n is carefully analyzed, but it may mislead some readers that u_n usually refers simultaneously to any generation and to the initial or zero generation. In practice, u_0 is arbitrary and $u_n (n>0)$ is determined from a recurrence relation. Hence, identifying u_n with u_0 is not legitimate.

The content is as follows. Chapter I, Gene Frequencies, Genotypic Frequencies, and Systems of Mating. This chapter is mostly concerned with the card-pack model and the simplest rules. Chapter II, Basic Types of Algebraic Series in Genetical Theory, dedicated to recurrence relations, and limiting values. Chapter III, First Steps in the Calculus of Finite Differences, including approximate extrapolation. Chapter IV, Binomial Series (by which the author means the binomial probability distribution). Chapter V, Non-assortative Mating in the Absence of Selection or Mutation. The term non-assortative stands for the usual "random" to which the author objects. This chapter treats the inheritance of one or several characters, sex-linked or not. Chapter VI, Selection. Chapter VII, Assortative Mating and Consanguinity, covering various systems of breeding. Chapter VIII, Mutation Pressure and Isolate Effects. The Appendices describe the simplest statistical techniques: I, Significance Tests for Mendelian Ratios, and II, The Estimation of Linkage and Determination of Variance Formulas for Gene-Frequency Analysis by the Method of Maximum Likelihood.

W. FELLER

Die Mathematische Denkweise. By Andreas Speiser. Basel, Birkhauser, 1945. 132 pages. S. Fr. 14.50.

In this book we have the philosophy of a mathematician. It is written with the enthusiasm of a distinguished mathematician who penetrates the arts and the world in his peculiar way. It will transmit, I imagine, this enthusiasm to every mathematician who is not only a craftsman but possessed by the sacred fire as the poet and philosopher ought to be.

The first section shows the rôle of symmetry in ornamentics. Examples with beautiful pictures are given from Egypt and Crete, from Arabic and Renaissance art.

The following section gives a description of the complex of motives in a piece of music with characterization of the motive by the number of its measures. The author gives examples from music by Mozart, Beethoven, Verdi and other composers.

Very impressive is the third section, in which the author investigates Dante's Divine Comedy in regard to natural philosophy which is essentially new Platonic. Here one finds a cosmic building which is the result of very scanty experience and a construction guided by the paramount desire for symmetry and harmony. If we compare this with the natural philosophy of today, we find the same tendency; however, the substructure of experience has grown to an immense extent and has so many interrelations that it represents in itself already a gigantic design.

The fourth part is about the philosophy of mathematics by Proclus Diadochus. This philosophy is essentially based on Plato's idea that mathematics, liberated from all the little devices of the craft, is a great ornament of divine origin. At the end of this section we find the following hymnic words of Proclus:

"This, therefore, is Mathematics: she reminds you of the invisible forms of the soul; she gives life to her own discoveries, she awakes the mind and purifies the intellect; she brings to light our intrinsic ideas, she abolishes oblivion and ignorance which are ours by birth. . . ."

The average mathematical reader will, probably, appreciate only with difficulty the chapter on numbers and space in the Neoplatonic doctrine. As the author justly remarks, numbers were something much more alive, much more real with the Greeks than with us. One may, perhaps, add that in the development of human thought the concept of the general number is a rather late achievement and that the Greeks were close enough to the birth of this concept to feel the wonder of its nature. In these theories as in the cabala the numbers are not used to describe the order of the universe. They are felt as *creating* this order. In trying to penetrate this realm of thought a mathematician may have the feeling that he comes out of the clear day into an almost uncanny and mystical dark.

The section on Goethe's Theory of Colors follows. The author shows that Goethe tries to bring a system of symmetry into the realm of colors. In this way, through an apparent psychical order, he achieves a connection of the physical phenomena with the realm of beauty and art.

The last section deals with astrology. Here we are introduced into the attempt to analogize the mathematical order of the stars with the somewhat chaotic fate of human beings and human society. The remarkable thing is that from the order of the heavenly bodies at the time of the birth, that is, from the horoscope, the great astrologers constructed human characters of a peculiar force. Sometimes, this construction formed the personality and life of the man

for whom the horoscope was cast.

The book has an epilogue, consisting of an oration which Speiser gave at the tercentenary of Kepler's death. Here, it is especially important to be reminded of the fact that Kepler's firm belief in the mathematical structure of the universe showed him the way and strengthened his amazing power of concentration and endurance to achieve his immortal work on the orbits of the planets.

It is interesting to realize that Speiser, in his discussions, dwells mainly on long bygone times, when the physical world and the world of the human soul were felt, by the wise men as well as by the common people, as one.

M. DEHN

Concise Analytic Geometry. By C. H. Sisam. New York, Henry Holt and Co., 1946. 9+155 pages. $2.00.

This book comprises the section on analytic geometry contained in the author's more extensive *College Mathematics*, which was reviewed in the February, 1947 issue of this MONTHLY (volume 54, number 2, page 119).

The definitions and proofs of theorems have been formulated with care and accuracy and no essential topic has been omitted. In spite of the concise treatment the explanations, illustrative examples, and exercises are quite adequate. Polar coördinates are introduced early and the polar equations of straight lines, circles, and conics are derived. The application of polar coördinates to more complicated loci is deferred to a later chapter. The last three chapters provide a brief introduction to solid analytic geometry. Answers to the odd numbered exercises are given in the back of the book.

In the opinion of the reviewer the book contains ample material for a three semester hour course in Analytic Geometry and it is believed that instructors who have experienced difficulty in finding a suitable text for such a course would do well to examine this book carefully.

H. P. EVANS

New Books Received

Antennae: An Introduction to Their Theory. By J. Aharoni. New York, Oxford University Press, 1946. $8.50.

College Algebra. Third Edition. By W. L. Hart. Boston, D. C. Heath and Co., 1947. 8+416 pages. $3.00.

College Algebra. Alternate Edition. By Paul Rider. New York, The Macmillan Company, 1947. 15+407 pages. $2.50.

Engineering Problems Manual. Fourth Edition. By F. C. Dana and L. R. Hillyard. New York and London, McGraw-Hill Book Co., 1947. 14+419 pages. $3.25

Mathematics of Accounting. Third Edition, By A. B. Curtis and J. H. Cooper. New York, Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1947. 10+550 pages. $6.00 trade edition, $4.50 text edition.

Preparatory Business Mathematics. By L. L. Smail. New York, Ronald

Press Co., 1947. 10+244 pages. $2.75.

Multiple-factor Analysis. By L. L. Thurstone. University of Chicago Press, 1947. 19+535 pages. $7.50.

Plane Trigonometry. By E. B. Mode. New York, Prentice-Hall, Inc., 1947. 10+216 pages.

Relativity. The Special and General Theory. By Albert Einstein. New York, Henry Holt and Co., 1930. Reprint, New York, Peter Smith, 1947. 13+168 pages. $2.50.

Lecciones de Analisis Infinitesimal. By F. J. Duarte. Caracas, Tipografia Americana, 1943. 605 pages.

An Introduction to Business Statistics. Second Edition. By J. R. Stockton. Boston, D. C. Heath and Co., 1947. 7+478 pages. $4.00.

Six-Place Tables. Seventh Edition. By E. S. Allen. New York, McGraw-Hill Book Co., 1947. 23+232 pages. $2.50.

CLUBS AND ALLIED ACTIVITIES

EDITED BY L. F. OLLMANN, Hofstra College

Send reports of all activities, such as club reports, special features, topics with references, student papers, and other material of interest to L. F. Ollmann, Hofstra College, Hempstead, New York.

CLUB REPORTS, 1946–47

Mathematics Club, Berea College

Professor W. R. Hutcherson of Berea College, was in charge of a mathematics and astronomy exhibit in connection with a science exhibit held at Berea, Kentucky on March 29, 1947. Many favorable remarks were made by visitors who classed the display in mathematics ahead of those of some of the sciences. Extensive use of placards, maps, blackboards and models was made in the following exhibits:

History of Mathematics: Development and trends
Computing Machines: The mechanical brain
Statistics: Applications and graphs (bar graphs, curves)
Mechanical Drawing: Blueprinting and layout work
Mathematics and Music
Slide Rule: Uses and types
Mathematics Tables and Applications of Calculus
Surveying: Instruments, and maps
Astronomy: Telescope, relative star sizes, and pictures
Magic in Mathematics: Magic squares, perpetual calendar, and puzzles
Modern Geometry: Law of duality and Desargues' Theorem
Calculus: Mechanics, and friction problems

Members of the club were divided into groups according to their interests and each group had charge of planning one of the exhibits and then demonstrated it during the period for exhibition.

Mathematics Club, Rutgers University

The *Mathematics Club* of Rutgers University, which had suspended its activity during the war, resumed operation on December 5, 1946, and regular semi-monthly meetings were held during the balance of the school year.

The following papers were presented:

Farey series, by Professor H. S. Grant

Pythagorean triangles, by Professor C. R. Phelps

Maxima and minima, by Dr. L. M. Court

The actuarial profession, by Professor R. Walter

Constructibility, by George Y. Cherlin

Mathematics in industry, by Professor F. G. Fender

The officers for 1946–47 were: President, George Y. Cherlin; Vice-President, Robert Coursen; Secretary-Treasurer, C. F. Pinzka. The Faculty Advisor was Professor C. R. Phelps.

Kappa Mu Epsilon, William Jewell College

Mu Sigma Alpha, the mathematics honorary fraternity at William Jewell College was organized by a group of interested students in January, 1943. It has assumed a place of distinction and respect among the honor societies on the campus. During the year 1946–47, the programs consisted of the following speeches made by members of the club and guest speakers:

Contribution of Einstein toward the atomic bomb and his mass-velocity relationship, by Dr. W. A. Hilton

The invention and development of the concept of zero, by Professor L. O. Jones

Fallacies in mathematics, by Nicholas Housley

Short-cuts of mathematics, by Professor C. O. Van Dyke

Geometric designs in lighting, by LeRoy Heaton

Telling time by the stars, by Lloyd Elrod

Improvement of high school mathematics courses, by Paul Curau

The case for mathematics, by Woody Rixey.

During the year 1946–47, several of the students became interested in becoming affiliated with a national mathematical fraternity. *Kappa Mu Epsilon* was petitioned for membership, and on May 7, 1947, the *Missouri Gamma* Chapter of *Kappa Mu Epsilon* was duly installed at William Jewell College by the *Missouri Beta* Chapter from Warrensburg under the direction of Dr. Claude Brown. The officers for 1946–47 were: President, Mary Ruth Carney; Vice-President, Truett Neese; Treasurer, LeRoy Heaton; Corresponding Secretary, Professor L. O. Jones; Secretary, Edwin Watson.

The officers elected for the year 1947–48 are: President, LeRoy Heaton; Vice-President, Maynard Cowan; Secretary, Walter Binns; Corresponding Secretary, Paul Swedburg; Treasurer, Lloyd Elrod.

Mathematics Club, Haverford College

During the past academic year, the following papers were prepared and informally discussed:

Elements of topology, by Dr. C. B. Allendoerfer
Squaring the circle, by Geert Prins
The four-color problem, by James Thorpe
Fermat's last theorem, by Murray Freeman
Fibonacci's series, by Norman Brous
Ham sandwich theorems, by Dr. John W. Tukey of Princeton University
The cattle problem of Archimedes, by Daniel Wagner.

The members of the club who distinguished themselves by presenting solutions for the monthly prize problems were: Murray Freeman, William Warner, Daniel Wagner, and Thomas Crolius.

The officers of the club for the year 1946–47 were: President, Geert Prins; Secretary, Leon Robbins, Jr.

Pi Mu Epsilon, St. Louis University

The *Missouri Gamma* Chapter of *Pi Mu Epsilon* has evidenced a very strong interest in the promotion of scholarship. At its three regular meetings, members of the chapter contributed scholarly papers on the following subjects:

History of logarithms, by Miss Margaret Willerding
Transcendental numbers, by Mr. Edwin Karlowicz
Mechanism and use of integrating machines, by Mr. Herman Plew, Jr.

A summary of each of these papers will appear in the regular issue of the Chapter news magazine, *The Missouri Gamma News*. Each of the meetings was followed by a social hour.

The principal and final function of the year took place on April 8 at Parks Air College. It consisted in the initiation of new members, the election of the new Director, Mr. Oliver F. Anderhalter, the Annual Lecture, and the Tenth Annual Banquet. The lecturer, Professor N. A. Court of the University of Oklahoma, spoke on *Mathematical Asides*. Rev. Patrick J. Holloran, S. J., President of Saint Louis University, addressed the group at the banquet. He expressed his personal satisfaction at the activity and growth of *Pi Mu Epsilon*. He gave a vote of thanks to Professor Regan for being the inspiration for much of this development.

Missouri Gamma News is a Chapter bulletin which is now in its second year of publication. It reviews the principal activities of the Chapter during the year and the plans for the year ahead. A summary by the author of the paper read at the regular meetings is included in the publication. News items about members of the Chapter, the plans of the Mathematics Department and of the allied sciences can be found in the Chapter news.

Officers for the year 1946–47 were: Director, Mr. Herbert Gebhart; Vice-Director, Miss Margaret Willerding; Secretary, Miss Frances Higgins; Faculty Advisor and Corresponding Secretary, Professor Francis Regan.

NEWS AND NOTICES

EDITED BY HARRY POLLARD, Cornell University

Readers are invited to contribute to the general interest of this department by sending news items to Harry Pollard, White Hall, Cornell University, Ithaca, New York.

STANFORD UNIVERSITY MATHEMATICS EXAMINATION

The second Stanford University Mathematics Examination (see this MONTHLY, vol. LIII, no. 7, pp. 406–409 (1946)) was held April 19, 1947, 2:00 p.m. to 5:00 p.m., in thirty-nine high schools in California; 196 students took part. The following problems were proposed.

1. To number the pages of a bulky volume the printer used 1890 digits. How many pages has the volume?

2. Among grandfather's papers a bill was found:

72 turkeys $—67.9—

The first and last digit of the number that obviously represented the total price of those fowls are replaced here by blanks, for they have faded and are now illegible.

What are the two faded digits and what was the price of one turkey?

3. Determine m so that the equation in x

$$x^4 - (3n + 2)x^2 + m^2 = 0$$

has four real roots in arithmetic progression.

4. Let α, β and γ denote the angles of a triangle. Show that

$$\sin \alpha + \sin \beta + \sin \gamma = 4 \cos \frac{\alpha}{2} \cos \frac{\beta}{2} \cos \frac{\gamma}{2}$$

$$\sin 2\alpha + \sin 2\beta + \sin 2\gamma = 4 \sin \alpha \sin \beta \sin \gamma$$

and

$$\sin 4\alpha + \sin 4\beta + \sin 4\gamma = -4 \sin 2\alpha \sin 2\beta \sin 2\gamma.$$

The writer of the best paper, Miss Maxine Steineke, Los Altos, California, a student at Palo Alto High School, Palo Alto, California, received a $500 scholarship at Stanford University. The following contestants received "Honorable Mention":

Mr. Raymond M. Hendricks, Santa Barbara, California, a student at Santa Barbara High School.

Mr. Jerold Bernard Weller, Los Angeles, California, student at Alexander Hamilton High School, Los Angeles.

PERSONAL ITEMS

Paul Alexandroff has been elected a foreign member of the National Academy of Sciences.

K. J. Arrow of Columbia University has been appointed research associate with the Cowles Commission for Research in Economics at the University of Chicago.

Professor W. L. Ayres of Purdue University has been appointed Dean of the

School of Science.

Dr. L. M. Brown of the University of Edinburgh, Dr. J. M. Hyslop of the University of Glasgow, Dr. J. M. Jackson of University College, Dundee, and Dr. A. J. Macintyre of the University of Aberdeen have been elected fellows of the Royal Society of Edinburgh.

Dean R. D. Carmichael of the Graduate School, University of Illinois, has retired with the title emeritus.

Miss Mary L. Cartwright of the University of Cambridge has been elected a fellow of the Royal Society.

Professor T. G. Cowling of the University College of North Wales has been elected a fellow of the Royal Society.

Associate Professor J. B. D. Derksen of the Netherlands School of Economics at Rotterdam has joined the Statistical Office of the United Nations at Lake Success.

Dr. Mary P. Dolciani of Cornell University has been awarded the Sigma Delta Epsilon post doctoral fellowship for 1947–48 and will study at the Institute for Advanced Study.

T. K. Glennan of the Ansco Division of General Aniline and Film Corporation, Binghamton, New York, has been appointed President of the Case Institute of Technology. He was wartime director of the U. S. Navy Underwater Sound Laboratory.

Professor C. C. MacDuffee of the University of Wisconsin has been awarded the degree of Doctor of Science at Colgate University.

Professor O. E. Neugebauer of Brown University and Professor Hassler Whitney of Harvard University have been elected to membership in the American Philosophical Society.

Messrs. Paul Olum of Harvard University and E. H. Spanier of the University of Michigan have been awarded Frank B. Jewett fellowships for 1947–48 by the American Telephone and Telegraph Company.

Professor P. A. Smith of Columbia University has been elected to membership in the National Academy of Sciences.

Associate Professor Max Astrachan of Antioch College has been promoted to a professorship.

Dr. W. D. Baten is now Chief, Operations Analysis Branch (A-5), Air Defense Command, Mitchell Field, New York.

Professor C. C. Bramble of the Naval Postgraduate School, Annapolis, Maryland, has accepted a position as Director of Computation and Ballistics at the Naval Proving Ground, Dahlgren, Virginia.

Professor Talmon Bell of Sterling College has retired as chairman of the Mathematics Department with the title of Professor Emeritus.

Assistant Professor Lipman Bers of Syracuse University has been promoted to an associate professorship.

Professor Garrett Birkhoff of Harvard University served as Walker Ames Professor at the University of Washington during the spring quarter.

Associate Professor I. S. Carroll of Syracuse University has been promoted to a professorship.

Dr. Myrtle Collier, Chairman of the Department of Mathematics of Immaculate Heart College, has retired with the title of Professor Emeritus.

Dr. John Dyer-Bennet of Purdue University has been promoted to an assistant professorship.

Professor Samuel Eilenberg of Indiana University has been appointed to a professorship at Columbia University.

Dr. Cleota G. Fry of Purdue University has been promoted to an assistant professorship.

Assistant Professor Abe Gelbart of Syracuse University has been promoted to an associate professorship. He will be on leave for the academic year 1947–48 to attend the Institute for Advanced Study.

Dr. W. H. Gottschalk of the University of Pennsylvania has been promoted to an assistant professorship.

Associate Professor S. H. Gould ofthe University of Toronto has been appointed to an assistant professorship at Purdue University.

Assistant Professor May N. Harwood of Syracuse University has been promoted to an associate professorship.

Associate Professor M. H. Heins of Brown University has been promoted to a professorship.

Associate Professor Magnus R. Hestenes of the University of Chicago has been appointed to a professorship at the University of California at Los Angeles.

Associate Professor H. K. Hughes of Purdue University has been promoted to a professorship.

Assistant Professor Mark Kac of Cornell University has been promoted to a professorship.

Dr. Irving Kaplansky of the University of Chicago has been promoted to an assistant professorship.

Assistant Professor M. W. Keller of Purdue University has been promoted to an associate professorship.

Assistant Professor J. L. Kelley of the University of Chicago has been appointed to an associate professorship at the University of California at Berkeley.

Dr. Carl Kossack of the Navy Department has been appointed to an associate professorship at Purdue University.

R. R. Kuebler of Dickinson College, Carlisle, Pennsylvania, has been promoted to an assistant professorship.

Professor C. G. Latimer of the University of Kentucky has been apponted to a professorship at Emory University.

Professor L. L. Lowenstein of Alfred University has been appointed professor and head of the department at Kent State University.

Professor Saunders MacLane of Harvard University has been appointed to a professorship at the University of Chicago. He will be on leave as a Guggen-

heim Fellow until the summer quarter of 1948.

G. E. Markle of the University of Detroit has been promoted to an assistant professorship.

R. D. Mindlin of Columbia University has been promoted to a professorship.

Associate Professor Harriet F. Montague of the University of Buffalo has been promoted to a professorship.

M. G. Moore of Bradley University, Peoria, Illinois, has been promoted to an associate professorship.

Assistant Professor Andrewa R. Noble of Montana State University has been appointed to an associate professorship at Pacific University, Forest Grove, Oregon.

Nilan Norris of Hunter College has been promoted to an assistant professorship.

J. I. Northam of the University of Wisconsin has been appointed to an assistant professorship at Kansas State College, Manhattan, Kansas.

Edward Paulson has been appointed lecturer in mathematics at the University of Washington.

Assistant Professor A. M. Peiser of Rutgers University has resigned to accept a position as mathematician with Hydrocarbon Research, Inc., of New York.

Dr. Clarence Perisho of McCook Junior College has been appointed assistant professor of chemistry and mathematics at Nebraska Wesleyan University, Lincoln, Nebraska.

Dr. Sam Perlis of Purdue University has been promoted to an assistant professorship.

Professor H. B. Phillips of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology has retired.

Assistant Professor R. S. Phillips of New York University has been appointed to an associate professorship at the University of Southern California.

E. K. Ritter of the Postgraduate School, United States Naval Academy, has been promoted to an associate professorship.

Assistant Professor C. K. Robbins of Purdue University has been promoted to an associate professorship.

Associate Professor Arthur Rosenthal of the University of New Mexico has been appointed to a professorship at Purdue University.

Professor A. C. Schaeffer of Stanford University has been appointed to a professorship at Purdue University.

Dr. Edith R. Schneckenburger of Michigan State Normal College has been appointed to an assistant professorship at the University of Buffalo.

Dr. I. E. Segal has been appointed to an assistant professorship at the University of Chicago.

Assistant Professor Ruth G. Simon of Berea College has been appointed to an assistant professorship at Morningside College, Sioux City, Iowa.

Dr. Jerome C. Smith of Lafayette College, Easton, Pennsylvania, has been

promoted to an assistant professorship.

Assistant Professor B. M. Stewart of Michigan State College has been promoted to an associate professorship.

Professor A. H. Taub of the University of Washington has been granted a leave of absence to accept a Guggenheim Fellowship. He will spend the year at Princeton University.

Bradford Tye of Bethany College has been promoted to an assistant professorship.

Assistant Professor G. B. Van Schaack of Union College has been appointed to an assistant professorship at Washington University.

Assistant Professor G. L. Walker of Temple University has been appointed to an assistant professorship at Purdue University

Assistant Professor A. D. Wallace of the University of Pennsylvania has been appointed to a professorship at Tulane University.

Professor Andre Weil of the University of Sao Paulo has been appointed visiting professor at the University of Chicago.

Associate Professor E. L. Welker of the University of Illinois has been appointed associate in mathematics in the Bureau of Medical Economic Research of the American Medical Association.

D. W. Western of Brown University has been promoted to an assistant professorship.

Dr. G. W. Whitehead of Princeton University has been appointed to an assistant professorship at Brown University.

Professor R. M. Winger of the University of Washington has been appointed Executive Officer of the Department of Mathematics.

Dr. Hyman J. Zimmerberg of Rutgers University has been promoted to an assistant professorship.

Assistant Professor H. S. Zuckerman of the University of Washington has been promoted to an associate professorship.

Professor Antoni Zygmund of the University of Pennsylvania has been appointed to a professorship at the University of Chicago.

The following appointments to instructorships are announced:

Brown University: Dr. A. B. Blakers, Mrs. R. C. Buck, Dr. Kathleen Butcher.

Cornell University: Dr. Christine Williams, Dr. Bertram Yood, Dr. Bryant Tuckerman, Jr.

General Motors Institute, Flint, Michigan: J. A. Straw

Rutgers University: C. D. Firestone

United States Naval Academy: J. R. Gorman

University of California: Dr. E. W. Barankin

University of Chicago: Edwin J. Akutowicz, J. Bruce Crabtree

University of Washington: Dr. Fumio Yagi

University of Wisconsin: Dr. A. M. Mark

Wellesley College: Mrs. Jerry Cowen

C. C. Carter, Bluffs, Illinois, honorary life member of the Association, lost his life in an accident May 5, 1947.

Professor P. J. Daniells of the University of Sheffield died May 25, 1946.

Professor Emeritus C. J. Keyser of Columbia University died May 8, 1947 at the age of eighty-six years.

The death of M. A. D. Kinsman has been reported.

Professor L. G. Owens, formerly of the University of Rangoon, died February 23, 1947.

THE MATHEMATICAL ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA

Official Reports and Communications

MEETING OF THE NORTHERN CALIFORNIA SECTION

The ninth annual meeting of the Northern California Section was held at the University of San Francisco on Saturday, January 25, 1947. Professor W. H. Myers, Chairman of the Section, presided at the morning and afternoon sessions.

The attendance was eighty-one including the following twenty-three members of the Association: H. M. Bacon; G. A. Baker; T. J. Bass, Jr.; Mable L. Beckwith; W. G. Brady; E. L. Fitzgerald, S.J.; S. A. Francis; Alice Graeber; W. R. Hanson; Emma V. Hesse; D. H. Lehmer; Sophia L. McDonald; E. D. Miller; F. R. Morris; W. H. Myers; C. D. Olds; George Pólya; Edris P. Rahn; E. B. Roessler; Pauline Sperry; Gabor Szegö; K. J. Waider; L. A. Walker.

At the business meeting the following officers were elected for the coming year: Chairman, Professor George Pólya, Stanford University; Vice-Chairman, Professor G. C. Evans, University of California; Secretary-Treasurer, Professor E. B. Roessler, University of California at Davis; Representative on the *California Journal of Secondary Education*, Mrs. Ruth G. Sumner, Oakland High School.

By invitation of the Section, Professor L. E. Reukema of the Department of Electrical Engineering, University of California, gave an hour's address during the morning session.

The following papers were presented:

1. *Vibration modes of tapered beams*, by Dr. Edmund Pinney, University of California, introduced by the Secretary.

The vibration modes of thin beams whose bending stiffness and linear densities may be expressed in simple powers of the distance along the beam may, in certain cases, be obtained in terms of Bessel functions. Four one-parameter families of beams are shown to have this property. These include the wedge and the cone. The results may be applied to finding bending modes for airplane wings while still in the preliminary design stage.

2. *Estimating electrostatic capacity from geometric data*, by Professor George Pólya, Stanford University.

Professor Pólya's paper appeared in this MONTHLY, April, 1947.

3. *Electronics in our modern world*, by Professor L. E. Reukema, University of California, introduced by the Chairman.

The speaker recalled that electronics includes the science and industry connected with vacuum tubes and their circuits. The tubes may be the tiny ones found in radio receivers, or tubes capable of passing many thousands of amperes or of generating pulses of millions of watts of radio-frequency power. They may act as rectifiers, amplifiers, oscillators, modulators, or detectors. Without vacuum tubes, long-distance telephones, world-wide radio communication, sound motion pictures, television, and radar would all be impossible. Vacuum tubes also guide our planes through the skies, our ships over the sea, and our missiles to enemy targets. They allow our planes to land through the densest fog. They automatically aim and fire our guns. In medicine and surgery electronic equipment has made notable contributions.

It is truly amazing what powers the vacuum tube gives to mankind. It makes possible the accurate measurement of distances as much smaller than the diameter of a raindrop as the diameter of the raindrop is smaller than that of a sphere 50 miles across. It enables one to weigh particles too small to be seen with the finest microscope, to detect energy in space in such tiny quantities that it would have to be received continuously for over a year to amount to as much energy as a fly expends in raising itself one inch, to measure currents so small that they would have to flow for over a billion years to pass as much electricity as flows through the filament of an ordinary electric light in a second. It enables a single television transmitter to hold a million or more receivers in synchronism to within one sixteen millionth part of a second. In the next few years it will probably supply jobs to millions of men in completely new industries, and will in thousands of ways increase our safety, comfort, and material wealth, and happiness.

4. *The impact of high speed computing on mathematics*, by Professor D. H. Lehmer, University of California.

This paper dealt with the several projects now under way in high speed computing devices, and the influences they are likely to have on mathematical problems and mathematical points of view.

5. *Refresher courses for returning students*, by S. A. Francis, San Mateo Junior College.

Mr. Francis discussed the topic of refresher courses as related to the field of mathematics. The speaker based his discussion on actual experiences with teaching such courses in classes under the auspices of E.S.M.W.T. during the war period from 1943 to 1945, and for returning students majoring in engineering and science at Stanford University and at San Mateo Junior College. Many sections of refresher courses were organized at San Jose State College, San Mateo Junior College, San Francisco Junior College, and at the University of California

to accommodate returning students who asked for such courses in the fields of algebra, trigonometry, analytic geometry, and calculus. The consensus of opinion of those engaged in the teaching of such classes is that the courses were of great value to the students as well as an encouraging and challenging experience for teachers of mathematics.

6. *Some problems in aerodynamics*, by Professor J. G. Herriot, Stanford University, introduced by the Chairman.

Professor Herriot gave a brief description of a wind tunnel, noting that the speed which can be attained is limited by the size of the test model even when sufficient power is available. In order to explain this he gave a simple mathematical proof of the fact that in subsonic flow a decrease in the cross-sectional area of the flow produces an increase in velocity whereas in supersonic flow the reverse is true. It was also shown how the non-linear differential equation of compressible flow can be linearized under the assumption of small perturbations of the velocity. It is then possible to deduce the properties of a compressible flow field from those of a known incompressible flow field. A number of other problems of current interest were mentioned briefly. These included pressure distributions over bodies of revolution in subsonic and supersonic flow, and mixed subsonic and supersonic flows.

7. *Some remarks on mathematical education*, by Professor Sophia L. McDonald, University of California.

E. B. ROESSLER, *Secretary*

MEETING OF THE OKLAHOMA SECTION

The annual meeting of the Oklahoma Section of the Mathematical Association of America was held in connection with the convention of the Oklahoma Education Association in Oklahoma City on Friday morning, February 14, 1947. Professor O. H. Hamilton, Chairman of the Section, presided.

Sixty-two persons attended the meeting, including the following twenty-one members of the Association: E. F. Allen, Arthur Bernhart, J. C. Brixey, H. N. Carter, N. A. Court, A. H. Diamond, O. H. Hamilton, J. O. Hassler, W. N. Huff, H. V. Huneke, J. E. LaFon, P. E. Lewis, G. E. Meador, H. A. Palmer, W. L. Shepherd, W. T. Short, D. R. Shreve, H. W. Smith, C. E. Springer, R. W. Veatch, J. H. Zant.

At the business session the following officers were elected: Chairman, D. R. Shreve, University of Tulsa; Vice-Chairman, W. T. Short, Oklahoma Baptist University; Secretary, J. C. Brixey, University of Oklahoma.

The program consisted of the following ten papers:

1. *On the representation problem for projective algebras*, by Professor J. C. C. McKinsey, Oklahoma A. and M. College, introduced by Professor A. H. Diamond.

C. J. Everett and S. Ulam have recently given postulates for projective algebras, and have solved the representation problem for all complete atomic projective algebras. The author showed that every projective algebra is isomorphic to

a sub-algebra of a complete atomic projective algebra; this result, combined with that of Everett and Ulam, provides a solution of the representation problem for arbitrary projective algebras. The method of proof is similar to the method used by M. H. Stone to establish a representation theorem for Boolean algebras. If A is a prime ideal, then A_x is defined to be the prime ideal which contains all elements of the form a_x, for a in A. If A and B are prime ideals, then $A \square B$ is defined to be the class of all prime ideals C which contain all elements of the form $a \square b$, where a is in A and b is in B. These definitions were extended to permit operations on classes of prime ideals.

2. *Some properties of algebras and their subalgebras*, by Professors A. H. Diamond and J. C. C. McKinsey, Oklahoma A. and M. College.

The problem considered was that of sub-algebras, S, generated by n elements of an algebra A for a given value of n, such that every S is a Boolean algebra but A is not Boolean. A proof was given that n is not less than 2. This result was used to prove a theorem of Wajsberg that every set of axioms for the sentential calculus must contain at least one axiom in at least three variables.

3. *Distance in the complex domain*, by Professor W. T. Short, Oklahoma Baptist University.

A point P in the complex domain was represented by the coördinates $(x+ui, y+vi)$. The distance between two such points P_1 and P_2 was defined by $d^2=(x_2-x_1)^2+(y_2-y_1)^2+(u_2-u_1)^2+(v_2-v_1)^2$, where the real part $r^2=(x_2-x_1)^2+(y_2-y_1)^2$, and the normal part $n^2=(u_2-u_1)^2+(v_2-v_1)^2$. The vector joining the two points is then $r+ni$, where $i^2=-1$. The vector is in the plane determined by the perpendiculars at P_1 and P_2. The vector in the complex domain consists of two parts. The real part r is the resultant of the two real vectors. To find the normal vector n, we take the resultant of the two normal vectors in the real plane. This length normal to the real plane is the normal vector.

4. *The inverse geometry of Clifford numbers*, by Professor E. F. Allen, Oklahoma A. and M. College.

The number $z=x+ry$, $r^2=\pm k^2$, k real, was used to solve geometric problems. In particular it was used to demonstrate a generalization of the concept of the perpendicularity of two lines.

5. *A contribution to the four-color problem*, by Professor Arthur Bernhart, University of Oklahoma.

Though a map may not be 4-colorable, yet each hemisphere of a minimal map must be colorable, subject to certain boundary conditions on the equatorial ring. For an n-ring there are $[3^{n-1}+3(-1)^n+2]/8$ color schemes. In the case of an 8-ring this leads to homogeneous equations in 274 unknowns. The algebraic solution is facilitated by a magic square arrangement. Results include a new reducible configuration: two hexagons guarded by two pentagons.

6. *A comment on the approximate solution of certain boundary value problems by submatric inversion*, by R. R. Reynolds, Oklahoma A. and M. College, introduced by Professor O. H. Hamilton.

Matric analysis was applied to the approximate solution and the improve-

ment of the approximate solution of certain boundary value problems.

7. *Mathematical analysis of artificial pulse lines*, by P. J. Miller, Oklahoma A. and M. College, introduced by Professor H. S. Smith.

This was a preliminary report on work which is still in progress.

8. *A conic in the tangent plane to a surface*, by W. W. Dolan, University of Oklahoma, introduced by Professor C. E. Springer.

The polar reciprocal of any line l at a point P of a surface, with respect to a Darboux quadric at the point, is a line in the tangent plane. If l varies so as to generate a quadric cone, the reciprocal line envelops a conic. Two theorems appear: (1) the reciprocal conic will be a hyperbola, parabola, or ellipse according as the line of centers of the Darboux quadrics is outside, on, or inside the cone generated by l; (2) the point P will be outside, on, or inside the reciprocal conic according as the cone generated by l has two lines, one line, or no line in common with the tangent plane.

Analytic treatment in a properly restricted case reveals that the reciprocal conic is an ellipse whose axes are simple functions of the principal radii of normal curvature of the surface at the point.

9. *On a differential equation satisfied by a certain set of polynomials*, by Professor W. N. Huff, University of Oklahoma.

The set $\{y_n(x)\}$ of polynomials given by the generating function

$$g(x, t) = f(xt)\phi(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} y_n(x)t^n$$

with

$$f(xt) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n \frac{(xt)^n}{n!} \quad \text{and} \quad \phi(t) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} b_n \frac{t^n}{n!}, \quad (a_n \neq 0, b_0 \neq 0),$$

was briefly considered. A relation for which these polynomials are of A type k in according with the definition of Sheffer was given. Finally a differential equation of infinite order satisfied by the set $\{y_n(x)\}$ was obtained along with a necessary and sufficient condition that the differential equation be of finite order.

10. *Diagnostic testing and remedial instruction in freshman mathematics for engineers*, by Professor D. R. Shreve, University of Tulsa.

A report on a three-year program of diagnostic testing and remedial instruction in freshman mathematics for engineers as carried out at Purdue University (1938–1942) was discussed.

JOHN C. BRIXEY, *Secretary*

MARCH MEETING OF THE MICHIGAN SECTION

The spring meeting of the Michigan Section of the Mathematical Association of America was held at the University of Michigan at Ann Arbor on Satday, March 22, 1947. This meeting also constituted the meeting of the Mathematics Section of the Michigan Academy of Science, Arts and Letters. Morning

and afternoon sessions and a luncheon-business meeting were held, at all of which the Chairman, Professor E. E. Ingalls, presided.

About ninety persons attended the meeting including the following forty-seven members of the Association: N. H. Anning, J. W. Baldwin, J. M. Barbour, F. A. Beeler, W. M. Borgman, J. W. Bradshaw, J. B. Brandeberry, R. V. Churchill, Nathaniel Coburn, A. H. Copeland, C. C. Craig, Wayne Dancer, P. S. Dwyer, C. M. Erikson, C. H. Fischer, J. S. Frame, V. G. Grove, G. E. Hay, Fritz Herzog, T. H. Hildebrandt, E. E. Ingalls, L. G. Johnson, L. S. Johnston, P. S. Jones, Wilfred Kaplan, G. P. Loweke, E. D. McCarthy, L. E. Mehlenbacher, A. L. Nelson, C. V. Newsom, George Piranian, G. Y. Rainich, E. D. Rainville, M. O. Reade, C. C. Richtmeyer, E. H. Rothe, L. J. Rouse, T. R. Running, Hans Samelson, W. F. Smith, T. H. Southard, B. M. Stewart, C. G. Stripe, I. L. Stright, D. R. Sudborough, R. M. Thrall, C. P. Wells, and R. L. Wilder.

The following officers were elected for the coming year: Chairman, Professor G. C. Bartoo, Western Michigan College of Education; Secretary-Treasurer, L. J. Rouse, University of Michigan.

At the morning and afternoon sessions the following program of eight papers was presented:

1. *The geometrical representation of group* C_2, by Dr. Mary H. Payne, University of Detroit, introduced by Professor L. S. Johnston.

It is well known that the unitary matrices form a double-valued representation of rotations in three-space, and that the entire group C_2 is a double-valued representation of the true Lorentz group, consisting of rotations in three-space and ordinary Lorentz transformations. The functions on which the matrices of the group C_2 act are two component vectors of the forms

$$\cos\frac{\theta}{2}\,e^{i(\phi+\psi)/2}, \qquad \sin\frac{\theta}{2}\,e^{i(-\phi+\psi)/2}$$

each multiplied by a constant. Dr. Payne showed that these two components may be interpreted as the relativistic distances of some point on the light cone from each of two reference points.

2. *"Kasner" monogenic functions*, by Professor Emeritus V. C. Poor, University of Michigan, introduced by the Secretary.

This is a restricted class of polygenic functions dependent upon the existence of the Cioranescue derivative, a two-dimensional directed space derivative. This note is an analogue to the R. J. Haskell paper on areolar monogenic functions in the *Bulletin of the American Mathematical Society*, vol. 52, 1946, pp. 332–337.

3. *Music and ternary continued fractions*, by Professor J. M. Barbour, Michigan State College.

The problem of dividing the octave (2:1) into a larger number of equal parts in terms of which the major third (5:4) and the perfect fifth (3:2) might

be expressed with nearly integral coefficients may be attacked by approximating the ratios of log 2:log 3/2:log 5/4 simultaneously by ternary continued fractions. The common division into twelve semitones gives the ratios 12:7:4. Some other known approximations are 19:11:6, 31:18:10, and 53:31:17. Slow convergence of the ternary continued fractions is desired in order to obtain ratios involving relatively small numbers. Hence in dividing to obtain the partial denominators for the left and right hand fractions it is well to divide by the larger remainder. For any right term $S_n = qS_{n-1} + S_{n-2}$, whereas for the left term $S_n = qS_{n-1} + S_{n-k-3}$ where k is the number of intervening right terms since the last left term.

4. *Transformations of sequences into regions*, by Dr. George Piranian, University of Michigan.

The core of a sequence $S_n = x_n + iy_n$ is a certain non-empty set in the closed complex plane; in the case of a bounded sequence it reduces to the least convex set containing all limit points of the sequence (*cf.* Knopp, *Zur Theorie der Lemilierungsverfahren*, Math. Zeitschr., vol. 31, 1929, pp. 95–127). In the formal transformation $t_n = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{nk} s_k$ of an arbirtary sequence s_n by an arbitrary matrix a_{nk}, some of the numbers t_n may fail to exist; but the core c_n of the sequence $w_{np} = \sum_{k=0}^{p} a_{np} s_p$ $(p = 0, 1, \cdots)$ always exists. The sequence of cores c_n is used to define a convex region Γ to be associated with the formal transformation of the sequence s_n. If the transformed sequence exists in the classical sense, the region Γ is the core of the transformed sequence.

5. *Multinomial theorem*, by Professor G. P. Loweke, Wayne University.

By proper arrangement of terms within the summation, the expansion of a multinomial of m terms may be expressed as

$$(A + B + C + \cdots + M)^n = \sum^{\beta=[(n-\gamma-\delta-\cdots-\mu)/2]} \sum_{\beta=\gamma}^{\gamma=[n/3]} \sum_{\gamma=\delta}^{\delta=[n/4]} \sum_{\delta=\epsilon} \cdots \sum_{\kappa=\mu}^{\kappa=[n/m-1]} \sum_{\mu=0}^{\mu=[n/m]} \frac{n!}{(n-\beta-\gamma-\delta-\cdots-\mu)!\beta!\gamma!\cdots\mu!} A^{n-\beta-\gamma-\cdots-\mu} B^{\beta} C^{\gamma} \cdots M^{\mu}$$

where the brackets in the upper limit indicate the integral part of the fraction, and the number of the summation signs will be m when $m < n$ and n when $n < m$. Expressed in this form the binomial theorem becomes,

$$(a + b)^n = \sum \sum_{\beta=0}^{\beta=n/2} \frac{n!}{(n-\beta)!\beta!} a^{n-\beta} b^{\beta}.$$

This summation for the multinomial expansion can be used to derive the terms of the expansion directly, or if an arbitrary selection of terms is employed, the evaluation of the limits only will indicate the number of characteristic terms which arise in the solution.

6. *Undergraduate program in mathematics*, by Professor C. V. Newsom, Oberlin College.

7. *A machine shop problem*, by Professor B. M. Stewart, Michigan State College.

A geometric solution is provided for the angular adjustments, A, B, of a drill vise which is to hold a rectangular parallelepiped so that a vertical drill will bore a hole whose projections on a pair of intersecting faces of the parallelepiped will make specified angles, a, b, with respect to the line of the intersection of these faces. The solution is found as follows: $A = 90° - a$; $B = \text{arc tan } (\cos a \tan b)$. A nomogram is provided for the latter relation.

8. *On graphical methods for elementary differential equations*, by Professor Wilfred Kaplan, University of Michigan

The purpose of this paper is to indicate how interest can be added to the course in elementary differential equations by a closer correlation between analytical and graphical methods. As illustrations, some significant properties of the graphs of linear, homogeneous, and exact equations, are pointed out.

L. J. ROUSE, *Secretary*

CALENDAR OF FUTURE MEETINGS

Thirty-first Annual Meeting, Athens, Georgia, January 1, 1948.

The following is a list of the Sections of the Association with dates of future meetings so far as they have been reported to the Secretary.

ALLEGHENY MOUNTAIN
ILLINOIS
INDIANA, Muncie, Oct. 17, 1947
IOWA, Fairfield, April 1, 1948
KANSAS
KENTUCKY
LOUISIANA-MISSISSIPPI
MARYLAND-DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA-VIRGINIA
METROPOLITAN NEW YORK
MICHIGAN
MINNESOTA
MISSOURI
NEBRASKA
NORTHERN CALIFORNIA, Berkeley, January 24, 1948
OHIO
OKLAHOMA
PACIFIC NORTHWEST, Eugene, Oregon, March, 1948
PHILADELPHIA, Bryn Mawr, Pa., November 29, 1947
ROCKY MOUNTAIN
SOUTHEASTERN
SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA, Redlands, March 13, 1948
SOUTHWESTERN
TEXAS
UPPER NEW YORK STATE
WISCONSIN, Beloit, May 8, 1948

New FUNDAMENTALS OF STATISTICS

J. B. SCARBOROUGH, U. S. Naval Academy
R. W. WAGNER, Oberlin College

Here is a clear, concise text covering the fundamental principles and techniques of statistical analysis for the lower college level. Notable features are the early introduction and consistent use of the computing scale, the restricting of the terminology of moments and of the "normal curve" to conform to student progress and thorough discussion of the function of probability in statistics.

Ready Oct. 1947

Numerous problems. Illustrative examples.

GINN AND COMPANY

BOSTON 17 NEW YORK 11 CHICAGO 16 ATLANTA 3 DALLAS 1
COLUMBUS 16 SAN FRANCISCO 5 TORONTO 5

TEXTBOOK NEWS

SOLID ANALYTIC GEOMETRY

By

John M. H. Olmsted, Ph.D.
University of Minnesota

▲

HERE is a new textbook designed for courses on the junior-senior or early graduate level in analytic geometry of three dimensions. The book contains the material for a very rich and extensive course, so arranged as to be conveniently adapted to courses of various content, and presented in a lucid understandable manner. Other features of the book are the simplicity of the presentation, the emphasis on logical reasoning and method, the many illustrative examples, over one thousand exercises, the systematic elementary treatment of Matrix Algebra, and the clarity of the fifty line drawings, representing surfaces and other spatial objects. 8vo. 257 pages. $4.00.

D. APPLETON-CENTURY COMPANY
35 West 32nd Street New York 1, New York

ANALYTIC GEOMETRY

By *David S. Nathan* and *Olaf Helmer*

● Careful training in identifying and drawing loci from their equations and in setting up the equations of loci—a unique, simple and rapid treatment of conic sections—these are but two of many distinctive features in this superior text.

PLANE TRIGONOMETRY
Revised Edition

By *Fred W. Sparks* and *Paul K. Rees*

● An amazingly simple, efficient text showing the principles of Plane Trigonometry and their application. During the past decade the authors worked daily to increase clarity for the student. Every page of this revision has been proved successful in the classroom.

INTRODUCTION TO COLLEGE MATHEMATICS

By *Carroll V. Newsom*

● Here is the ideal mathematics study—a special two-semester terminal course—for that majority of college students who do not major in mathematics. The result of 12 years' research, and pre-tested at two colleges, this text is the first ever written for this important group.

MATHEMATICS IN HUMAN AFFAIRS

By *Franklin W. Kokomoor*

● An unusual and absorbing text combining the history and the study of mathematics from algebra to calculus. Presented as exciting narrative, with human-interest applications and explanations simple enough for students with little previous training.

SEND FOR YOUR APPROVAL COPIES

PRENTICE-HALL, INC. 70 FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK 11

Just published!

COLLEGE ALGEBRA

By *Moses Richardson*, author of FUNDAMENTALS OF MATHEMATICS, Former Member of Institute for Advanced Study at Princeton

This new, remarkably lucid exposition of College Algebra

- gives unusual insight into sound mathematics without excessive rigor.
- is far more complete than most texts.
  Beginning with a full review of elementary algebra on a mature level, it covers thoroughly all conventional subjects, and adds optional material now needed by science students and students preparing to specialize in mathematics.
- stresses fundamental concepts—but not at expense of technical achievement.
- motivates and justifies techniques at the student's level.
- includes ample exercises, many with practical application.

First printing of 20,000 copies!

Coming this fall!

CALCULUS AND ITS APPLICATIONS

By *Raymond Douglas* and *Samuel Demitry Zeldin*, Massachusetts Institute of Technology

This beginning course for students of mathematics, physics, chemistry and engineering is designed to cover a complete calculus program in an unusually short time. The text is particularly suited to engineering and technical schools and universities where the emphasis is on technique.

Note these significant qualities:

- Presents material with maximum of simplicity and order.
- Combines brevity with sufficient rigor.
- Emphasizes essential topics, stresses applications.
- Includes many topics not found in one book.

In Prentice-Hall Mathematics Series, *Dr. Albert A. Bennett*, Editor

SEND FOR YOUR APPROVAL COPIES

PRENTICE-HALL, INC. 70 FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK 11

PRINCETON MATHEMATICAL SERIES

Edited by MARSTON MORSE H. P. ROBERTSON A. W. TUCKER

1. **The Classical Groups.**
   By HERMANN WEYL — 314 *pages*, $5.00
2. **Topological Groups.**
   By L. PONTRJAGIN (translated by E. Lehmer) — 310 *pages*, $5.00
3. **An Introduction to Differential Geometry.**
   By LUTHER PFAHLER EISENHART — 316 *pages*, $3.50
4. **Dimension Theory.**
   By WITOLD HUREWICZ & HENRY WALLMAN — 174 *pages*, $3.00
5. **Analytical Foundations of Celestial Mechanics.**
   By AUREL WINTNER — 460 *pages*, $6.00
6. **Laplace Transform.**
   By DAVID VERNON WIDDER — 416 *pages*, $6.00
7. **Integration.**
   By EDWARD JAMES MCSHANE — 400 *pages*, $6.00
8. **Theory of Lie Groups.**
   By CLAUDE CHEVALLEY — 228 *pages*, $3.00
9. **Mathematical Methods of Statistics.**
   By HARALD CRAMÉR — 570 *pages*, $6.00
10. **Several Complex Variables.**
    By S. BOCHNER & W. T. MARTIN — (In preparation)
11. **Introduction to Topology.**
    By S. LEFSCHETZ — (In preparation)

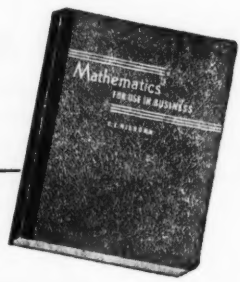
The prices above are subject to an educational discount of fifteen per cent.

PRINCETON UNIVERSITY PRESS, PRINCETON, N.J.

Mathematics

FOR USE IN BUSINESS

by **C. E. HILBORN**



Lithoprint Edition Now Available through ADDISON-WESLEY PRESS INC.

8½" x 11" 352 pages. List Price $3.20

1. The Fundamental Processes
2. Short-Cut Methods
3. Formulas and Equations
4. Logarithms
5. Percentage
6. Inventories and Turnover
7. Simple Interest
8. Bank Discount
9. Equation of Accounts
10. Statistical Graphs
11. Progressions
12. Compound Interest
13. Compound Present Value and Discount
14. Ordinary Annuities — Final Value
15. Ordinary Annuities — Present Value
16. Annuities Due and Other Special Annuities
17. Bonds
18. Depreciation, Depletion, Perpetuities, and Capitalized Cost
19. Probability and the Binomial Theorem
20. Approach of Statistics

NOTE: A regular cloth-bound edition of Mathematics for Use in Business will be published in 1948 by Houghton Mifflin Company. Orders for the preliminary lithoprint edition may be placed either through Houghton Mifflin Company or through Addison-Wesley Press Inc., Kendall Square Building, Cambridge 42, Mass.

HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY

Boston 7 — Dallas 1
New York 16 — Atlanta 3
Chicago 16 — San Francisco 5

Algebra for College Students

By BRITTON and SNIVELY ***529 pp., $3.00***

Combines the advantages of a refresher course in the fundamentals of arithmetic and elementary algebra as well as topics customarily covered in college courses. Complete with carefully graded exercises, both oral and written, suitable for students at all levels.

Intermediate Algebra

By BRITTON and SNIVELY ***352 pp., $2.00***

This volume consists of the first twelve chapters of *Algebra for College Students* plus additional chapters on Logarithms, Progressions and the Binomial Theorem, and Systems involving Quadratic Equations, as well as drills and exercises.

Plane Trigonometry

By WILLIAM K. MORRILL ***245 pp., $2.50***

An important revision of a successful text designed to provide the student with a complete study of the fundamentals of trigonometry. Among many outstanding features, it offers a study of the fundamentals of trigonometry, a chapter on the problems of elementary physics, engineering and navigation, and an enlarged section on graphs.

Mathematics of Finance

By JOHN A. NORTHCOTT ***252 pp., $3.00***

The use of three fundamental formulas discussed in this book will enable the student to understand the subject of compound interest and its application. More than 500 graded problems are included for drill purposes.

Four Outstanding McGraw-Hill Books

Differential and Integral Calculus

By HAROLD M. BACON, Stanford University. 771 pages, $4.00

Generally regarded as one of the best and most comprehensive expositions of the fundamentals of the calculus available. Presents the material so that the student can master it with a minimum of explanation by the instructor. Illustrative examples are worked out in great detail. There are more than 4,000 carefully chosen exercises.

Essential Business Mathematics

By LLEWELLYN R. SNYDER, San Francisco Junior College. *McGraw-Hill Publications in Business Education.* 434 pages, $2.75

A collegiate text in arithmetic, presenting the fundamentals of business mathematics, including intensive refresher work in computation and an introduction to the primary principles and business practice in the arithmetical essentials of accounting, investments, business finance, money and banking, insurance, retailing, real estate, statistics, etc.

Mathematical and Physical Principles of Engineering Analysis

By WALTER C. JOHNSON, Princeton University. 346 pages, $3.50

Presents the essential physical and mathematical principles and methods of attack which underlie the analysis of many practical engineering problems. Particular emphasis is placed upon physical concepts, the use of assumptions, procedures in setting up equations, the use of mathematics as a tool in accurate and quantitative reasoning, and the physical interpretation of mathematical results.

Elementary Differential Equations. New third edition

By LYMAN M. KELLS, U. S. Naval Academy. In press—ready for fall classes

A thorough revision of a standard textbook especially suitable for students of engineering and applied sciences. Nearly every article has been clarified, expanded, and strengthened, and almost all material has been revised to achieve more logical order and greater simplicity. Many new problems have been added.

Send for copies on approval

McGRAW-HILL BOOK COMPANY, Inc.

330 West 42nd Street **New York 18, N.Y.**

UNIVERSITY

New! Ready Now!

COLLEGE ALGEBRA, *Third Edition*

WILIAM L. HART

New features of this edition are (1) location changes of a few optional chapters and supplementary section to facilitate using the essential course content; (2) fresh exercises except for the unique problems and certain routine exercises; (3) many minor alterations suggested by classrom use of the preceding edition; and (4) pleasing new format, clear type, wider pages. *362 pages of text.*

Essentials of Analytic Geometry

CURTISS and MOULTON

A rigorous course in plane analytic geometry with chapters on solid analytic geometry for calculus and engineering courses. Based on the authors' earlier *Analytic Geometry* with several chapters omitted and the remaining chapters either rewritten or revised. Starred sections indicate optional omission to adapt the book for use in a 3-hour course. 269 pages. $2.80

D. C. Heath and Company

Boston New York Chicago Atlanta
San Francisco Dallas London

MACMILLAN TEXTS

College Algebra

By E. RICHARD HEINEMAN

Associate Professor of Mathematics, Texas Technological College

This new text for freshman students contains an exceptionally thorough review of high school algebra, and introduces very little analytics and almost no calculus. The explanations of factoring and of operations with zero are unusually clear and explicit, as is the explanation of the troublesome question of the "sign of the fraction." The book contains extensive sets of carefully graded problems. *To be published in the fall.* $3.00 (probable)

The Mathematical Theory of Finance

By KENNETH P. WILLIAMS

Professor of Mathematics, Indiana University

This text places emphasis on clear thinking, on thorough analysis of problems to find the simplest method of computation, and on thinking out solutions rather than searching for special formulae. Algebraic problems as well as numerical problems are given, and investment functions are included in the tables of logarithms. *Revised Edition to be published in the summer.* $4.50 (probable)

Elements of Symbolic Logic

By HANS REICHENBACH

Professor of Philosophy, University of California at Los Angeles

Beginning with a general exposition of the problems of logic and language, this text then takes up the calculus of propositions, for which the truth table method is used. It then turns to the calculus of functions, for which the truth table method is developed. Further chapters deal with the calculus of classes, of the higher calculus of functions, conversational language, and connective operations and modalities. $5.00

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

UM

THE AMERICAN
MATHEMATICAL MONTHLY

THE OFFICIAL JOURNAL OF
THE MATHEMATICAL ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA, INC.

VOLUME 54 NUMBER 7

PART II

PUBLIC LIBRARY
SEP 26 1947
DETROIT

FOURIER'S SERIES

The Genesis and Evolution of a Theory

R. E. LANGER

Number 1
of the
HERBERT ELLSWORTH SLAUGHT
MEMORIAL PAPERS

AUGUST-SEPTEMBER 1947

ONE DOLLAR A COPY

The AMERICAN MATHEMATICAL MONTHLY

(Founded in 1894 by Benjamin F. Finkel)

Carroll V. Newsom, *Editor*

ASSOCIATE EDITORS

C. B. ALLENDOERFER	H. P. EVANS	L. F. OLLMANN
E. F. BECKENBACH	HOWARD EVES	HARRY POLLARD
L. M. BLUMENTHAL	G. E. HAY	R. F. RINEHART
N. B. CONKWRIGHT	N. H. McCOY	E. P. STARKE
H. S. M. COXETER	W. T. MARTIN	E. P. VANCE

COMMITTEE ON SLAUGHT MEMORIAL PAPERS

N. H. McCoy, *Chairman*, L. L. Dines, W. E. Milne, C. V. Newsom

---

THIS IS THE OFFICIAL JOURNAL OF THE
MATHEMATICAL ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA, INC.
(Devoted to the Interests of Collegiate Mathematics)

OFFICERS OF THE ASSOCIATION

President, L. R. Ford, Illinois Institute of Technology
Honorary President, W. D. Cairns, Oberlin College
First Vice-President, W. L. Ayres, Purdue University
Second Vice-President, C. B. Allendoerfer, Haverford College
Secretary-Treasurer, W. B. Carver, Cornell University
Associate Secretary, Harry Pollard, Cornell University
Editor, C. V. Newsom, Oberlin College

Additional Members of the Board of Governors: Walter Bartky, H. M. Beatty, J. W. Bradshaw, H. E. Bray, R. W. Brink, L. E. Bush, H. S. M. Coxeter, W. L. Duren, D. W. Hall, E. H. C. Hildebrandt, Ralph Hull, D. H. Lehmer, C. C. MacDuffee, W. T. Martin, A. S. Merrill, Deane Montgomery, A. W. Recht, I. S. Sokolnikoff, E. P. Starke, H. P. Thielman, C. W. Watkeys, W. L. Williams.

Entered as second class matter at the post office at Menasha, Wis. Acceptance for mailing at special rate of postage provided for in the Act of February 28, 1925, embodied in Paragraph 4, Section 538, P. L. and R., authorized April 1, 1926.

Subscription Price: To Members, $4 a Year, To Others, $5 a Year.

Published by the Association at Menasha, Wisconsin, and Oberlin, Ohio during the months of January, February, March, April, May, June-July, August-September, October, November, December.

UNIVERSITY

FOURIER'S SERIES

The Genesis and Evolution of a Theory

By

RUDOLPH E. LANGER

Professor of Mathematics

in the

University of Wisconsin

The First

HERBERT ELLSWORTH SLAUGHT

MEMORIAL PAPER

Published as a supplement to the AMERICAN MATHEMATICAL MONTHLY

Volume 54 Number 7

August-September, 1947

THE HERBERT ELLSWORTH SLAUGHT MEMORIAL PAPERS

The editorial committee is happy to present this, the first of the Slaught Memorial Papers. In view of the very great interest which Professor R. E. Langer has had in these Papers from their very inception, it is particularly fitting that he should be the author of the first of the series.

At this time it may be appropriate to give a brief account of the origin of these Papers, and an indication of their purpose. This can perhaps best be done by quoting from the reports of two different committees of the Association. In the MONTHLY for February, 1940, there appears the report of a "committee to review the activities of the Mathematical Association of America." Along with other recommendations, this report, which was prepared by Professor Langer as chairman, suggested that the Association establish a series of expository pamphlets which might well take the form of a memorial to Professor Slaught. Subsequently, another committee was appointed, with Professor C. V. Newsom as chairman, to make specific recommendations for the establishment of such a series. The report of this committee appeared in the MONTHLY for February, 1941.

From the report of the "Langer Committee" we may quote as follows:

"The encouragement and sponsorship of expository and critical writing is one of the objectives of the Association which enjoys the unanimous support of the members. There is a ready welcome and a general demand for more readable scholarly papers on all kinds of mathematical subjects from the classical to the modern, from the elementary to the advanced, on theory, on applications, on history, or on philosophy. In the past there have, of course, been the Carus monographs, and from time to time excellent papers in the MONTHLY. There seems, however, to be at the present little or no means for the ready publication of writings which in length are intermediate betwen the relatively few pages of a journal paper, and the relatively many pages of a complete monograph. Such papers, say in length between twenty and a hundred pages, could be profitably written on subjects in many categories, including among others, elementary introductory expositions of theories and their applications, more advanced expositions and interpretations of modern viewpoints and theories, philosophical essays and criticisms, broad historical accounts of important schools, or biographical accounts of individuals."

The report of the "Newsom Committee" said in part:

"The principal conclusion reached by this investigation is that there is a widespread interest in additional expository writing of the type discussed in the report of the 'Langer Committee,' and that those who are now sponsoring series of expository monographs would welcome the creation of additional opportunities for the publication of studies pertaining to mathematical subjects. In truth, the members of the committee have been impressed with the enthusiasm which has been displayed by those who have given opinions relative to the possibility

of a new publication program sponsored by the Association. Syntheses of modern investigations in many fields of mathematics seem to be wanted by college men who do not have an opportunity to follow developments in the mathematical literature. Instructors in our junior colleges and secondary schools who may have a limited preparation in mathematics are seeking easily accessible accounts of some of the older theories. Some correspondents have expressed the belief that there is an amazing dearth of readable mathematical material for college students who have studied little beyond the calculus. And finally, some have emphasized that the interest of the American public in mathematical attainments and methods needs to be cultivated; this interest is attested to by the recent wide sale of a few popular books upon mathematics."

In accordance with the recommendations of the "Newsom Committee," the Board of Governors authorized a series of expository pamphlets to be known as the "Herbert Ellsworth Slaught Memorial Papers." The long delay in the actual appearance of the first of these Papers was largely caused by the demands of the war which left little or no time for the writing of mathematical expositions.

The Slaught Memorial Papers are to be published in the form of supplements to the MONTHLY and, at least for the present, are being sent free to all subscribers. The success of this project will depend on the interest of mathematicians generally and, more particularly, upon the co-operation of competent scholars who will be willing to devote sufficient effort to the difficult but worth-while task of writing elementary expositions of their respective fields of interest.

The editorial committee through the undersigned will welcome suggestions from any interested persons and, in particular, will be glad to hear from prospective authors of expository articles which might be suitable for publication in this series.

N. H. McCOY

TABLE OF CONTENTS

The Herbert Ellsworth Slaught Memorial Papers iii
Preface 1

PART I

Chapter

1. Introduction 4
2. Of mathematical applications to physics 6
3. The loaded string 8
4. The equations of motion for the continuous string 13
5. The d'Alembert-Euler-Bernoulli controversy 17
6. Lagrange's solution of Bernoulli's problem in curve fitting 20
7. Lagrange and the vibrating string 24
8. Euler's determination of the coefficients 27
9. Fourier and the theory of heat 30
10. Fourier's formal solution of his problem 34
11. The reduction and interpretation of the solution 38
12. The Dirichlet integrals 42

PART II

13. The differential boundary problem 46
14. The characteristic values and solutions 48
15. The adjoint boundary problem 50
16. Generalized orthogonality 54
17. The formal representation of an arbitrary function 58
18. Some examples 60
19. Another example 65
20. The Green's function 68
21. The residues of the Green's function 72
22. The Fourier's series again 76

REFERENCES 81
APPENDICES 82

FOURIER'S SERIES

THE GENESIS AND EVOLUTION OF A THEORY

R. E. LANGER

PREFACE

In choosing to present in this exposition some chapters from the theory of the representation of arbitrary functions in infinite series, I have done so in the belief that this subject has an unusually broad appeal. For in singular measure it serves both theoretical and practical ends. The pure analyst finds in it a wealth of structure and subtle inter-relationship, while the applied mathematician and the related scientist find in it, no less, a tool of almost endless flexibility and use.

The simpler formal elements of the theory of trigonometrical infinite series are, it may be assumed, in some measure familiar to all who aspire to a level of mathematical attainment above the elementary one. Presentations of them in text-book form are common, and many of them eminently readable. It is not my purpose to duplicate any such expositions of fact and procedure, but rather to present here other matters less usually considered. These I have, in the main, centered about two focal theses, namely first, a sort of case history of the inception of the theory and its development to the stage attained by Fourier, and second, a generalization of the theory in which the trigonometrical form of it is subordinated to the status of a mere special case.

In its modern form the theory of Fourier's series and its applications to problems of physics admit of presentation in a direct and logical manner that is, on the whole, strikingly economical in design. The reasoning is straight-forward and to the point, and has at almost every turn an aspect of complete inevitability. The trigonometric formulas invariably appear to fit the needs at issue with such precision and neatness as could not have been more so had they been specifically tailored to the purpose. So completely is this true, that it seems no far cry to the suggestion that the whole structure might be the creation of some single master architect, who, in his genius, could draw to hand the exact and unerring means for an orderly and consummate unfolding of all the whole essential machinery of thought and analysis. Of erstwhile possible deficiencies, no trace is left revealed.

Well developed mathematical theories are prone to seem like that, and in the deceptiveness of this there is weakness as well as strength. The craftsman, whose concern with the theory is motivated by the mere search for a tool, naturally has small interest in the cruder forms of it that are now obsolete. For the student whose concern is with ideas no less than with facts, on the other hand, the too finished result is often concealing as well as revealing. The confusion of germinal ideas, the labor and stumbling of the early advance, the frustrations in imprecise notions—all these are matters which for a speedy mastery of the facts are well

left aside. But precisely in these as in none other are to be discerned the creative imagination, the initial inductions and the logical strategy by which the final result was shaped. When, as in the present instance, the ingenuity and the technical exploits which gave the impetus and direction were those of such masters as the Bernoullis, Euler, d'Alembert, Lagrange and Fourier, it need hardly be feared that a review of the course of the developments will prove to be an unrewarding venture. In the growth of mathematics, much more than in its refined and polished results, is its living character evidenced.

Generalization is the medium through which the mathematician constantly seeks the enlargement of his conceptions and understanding. The vista revealed by an extant theory may be broad, but it is broadened further by generalization. And from the more expansive viewpoint the scene may be revealed not only more amply but also more distinctly. A greater simplicity in the intrinsic plan may be discernible, for many features originally judged to be quite essential may be shown, on the contrary, to be in fact merely incidental or fortuitous. This is quite the case with the Fourier theory. Its dependence upon the trigonometric formulas of combination is so conspicuous as to seem to be the very essence of it. And if in the related theories of representations in series of Bessel functions or Legendre polynomials *etc.* other combination formulas are basic, these in turn generally seem, if anything, even more specialized. A true generalization, from which the Fourier theory may be drawn forth as a special case, is the theory of ordinary differential boundary problems in which the fundamental interval of the variable is one upon which the differential equation is without singular points.

The discussion which I have given here is intended to serve these two purposes. In the first part the theme is historical. It centers about the incipience and the classical development of the theory, and is in fact a digest of some works by different masters through which conspicuous advances were made. This comes to its terminus with the discussion of Fourier's deductions, and therewith the historical thread is definitively dropped. In the second part, which is devoted to the generalization, the purpose is purely expository. The material is there set forth in as elementary a manner as I found possible, not with the generality in which it exists in the literature, but with such generality as seemed to be adequate to the display of its essential character. The fact that this larger theory embraces that of Fourier, and the manner in which it does so, is shown at appropriate points by drawing the trigonometric formulas forth as specializations obtainable without any peculiar implementations from the more general relationships derived.

I believe that in the main the paper will be readable for students who in mathematics have gone but little beyond a good course in the calculus. The simplest facts about infinite series and differential equations, the formulas for the trigonometric functions in terms of exponentials, and such, have been assumed. Beyond that all pertinent deductions have been included until the closing chapters are reached. Incidental material has, in part, been relegated to

appendices. In the final chapters the elementary theory of functions of a complex variable, and in particular the theory of residues is a requisite.

In taking material from the literature, especially in the earlier parts of the paper, I have felt under no obligation to hold to the letter of the originals. The excerpts are, therefore, distinctly not to be regarded as facsimiles or verbatim reports. Although it was my intention to preserve the spirit, many formal changes were made, in part to bring the contributions from diverse sources under a consistent scheme of notation, but also in part to eliminate discursive material and to avail myself of such advantages as the presentation to modern readers might afford. The sources in the literature from which excerpts were made, or at which more extensive deductions may be found, have been indicated in the text, and are listed at the end of the paper. I have, however, made no attempt whatsoever to be complete in this matter.

PART I

CHAPTER 1

Introduction. It is perhaps true that few mathematical doctrines are built around facts which on first acquaintance seem so surprising as those of the infinite trigonometric series. That some such series represent functions is obvious. Simple examples are easily constructible in any abundance. How broad or how deep the adaptability of these series for functional representation may be, is, on the other hand, far from easy to see. The terms of the series are but elementary functions of a very simple type—the sines and cosines of the multiples of an angle. The theory of power series does not promise much by analogy, since those series can represent only such functions as have all the regularity which unlimited differentiability assures. It might well be expected, therefore, that the property of trigonometric representability attaches only to the functions of a quite restricted class. Historically that was the opinion which originally held sway, and which was very generally maintained. It was, in fact, so long maintained and so tenaciously, even by the greatest of mathematical masters, and in the face of most insistent evidence to the contrary, that the final breach with it took on quite definitely the character of an emancipation.

The concept of the function lies at the very heart of mathematical analysis. As it is now currently accepted it is a notion of very great breadth, covering very general interdependencies of variables upon each other. During the eighteenth century this concept was not only much more restricted, but precisely what its content and delimitations were had not yet been brought to any complete or clear formulation. Imprecise notions rarely fail to breed confusion, and in this respect the functional notion of that time was in no way an exception. It was differently conceived by different investigators. And these latter then disagreed among each other because unconsciously they talked at cross purposes. The written words flowing from different pens had different meanings. While, for instance, the function and the analytic formula were one to d'Alembert, the function was thought of as a graph by Euler, and probably meant something else again to still another.

The basis of the functional notion was originally drawn, of course, from observations upon concrete examples—in the main from such functions as we now designate as of elementary type, such as present themselves in the simpler applications of mathematics to the problems of physics. Such functions are almost invariably expressible by formulas. They generally have comparatively simple, orderly, and continuous graphs, and the identity of any two of them is restricted to isolated values of the variable. Inasmuch as this category includes no examples of distinct functions whose graphs have an entire arc in common, it was no more than natural then to consider that generally the course of a function over any interval was determinative and completely identifying, so that the graph over its entire range of definition was to be thought of as unambiguously fixed. Functional relationships such as are now commonly dealt with, in which

the variables are related by different laws in different parts of an interval, were not thought of then as subsumed in any single function at all, but were regarded rather as a composite of a plurality of functional fragments. The possibility of representing such a conglomerate by a single formula was not even conceived of.

The eighteenth century stands out in mathematical history as an era of great genius. Through the work of an astonishing array of masters the science was extended and broadened by the opening of many new fields. Technical skill attained to extraordinarily high levels and new ideas were crowded one upon the other. And yet through this period the facts of the trigonometric series withheld themselves. Euler, d'Alembert, Lagrange and others walked upon the very edge of them without falling upon them. A more conspicuous example of the confining effects of preconceptions is hardly to be found. The break with all this remained to become the accomplishment of the next century, the personal achievement of Fourier. Once the step to a broader conception of the function had been made, the results of computations upon trigonometric series could be given a much more inclusive interpretation. As is now generally familiar, such series may represent functions which are not only discontinuous, but which may be quite arbitrary in the sense that over different portions of the interval they may accord with laws that need have no logical relation with each other. Computations upon even a few of the initial terms of the series often reveal these facts quite clearly.

As Fourier announced his famous theorem it was to the following effect:

Any single-valued function $f(x)$ defined over an interval $-l<x<l$, is representable over this interval by a series of sines and cosines in the manner

$$f(x) = \frac{a_0}{2} + \sum_{k=1}^{\infty}\left[a_k \cos\frac{k\pi x}{l} + b_k \sin\frac{k\pi x}{l}\right]. \tag{1.1}$$

In this representaion the coefficients are those which are computable from the function $f(x)$ by the formulas

$$\begin{aligned} a_k &= \frac{1}{l}\int_{-l}^{l} f(s)\cos\frac{k\pi s}{l}\,ds, \\ b_k &= \frac{1}{l}\int_{-l}^{l} f(s)\sin\frac{k\pi s}{l}\,ds. \end{aligned} \tag{1.2}$$

If the interval over which the representation is to maintain is only $0<x<l$, then either sines or cosines alone suffice, the series being in the one case

$$f(x) = \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} b_k \sin\frac{k\pi x}{l}, \tag{1.3}$$

with the coefficients

$$b_k = \frac{2}{l}\int_{0}^{l} f(s)\sin\frac{k\pi s}{l}\,ds, \tag{1.4}$$

and in the other case

$$f(x) = \frac{a_0}{2} + \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} a_k \cos \frac{k\pi x}{l}, \tag{1.5}$$

with the coefficients

$$a_k = \frac{2}{l} \int_0^l f(s) \cos \frac{k\pi s}{l} \, ds. \tag{1.6}$$

This theorem, in this utter generality, is now known, of course, to be not strictly true, even with the modern notion of the term function. The restrictions which must be applied are, however, in no way gross. They are, on the contrary, so subtle that in the pursuit of them much further clarification of analytic notions was achieved. The rôle which the trigonometric series have played in the development of precise conceptions is, on these many accounts, one of unusual interest to the student of the evolution of mathematical ideas. [1]

CHAPTER 2

Of mathematical applications to physics. By the time of the year 1725, a decade after the death of Leibniz and near the close of Newton's life, familiarity with the formal processes of the calculus had become widely disseminated, and facility in the use of these new techniques had been developed to a very substantial degree. In particular their effectiveness as instruments for the treatment of problems in mechanics had been generally recognized. This science was, therefore, under assiduous study. The more immediate of its problems—in the main those centering themselves around the motions of single mass particles—had already been pretty effectively brought to their solutions. The forefront of interest had, therefore, already been pushed beyond them to matters of greater complexity, such as presented themselves in connection with the motions of bodies with several or many degrees of freedom, or even with the reactions of flexible continuous mass distributions. Problems in the vibrations of elastic bodies in particular had begun to receive attention, and in the ensuing period these were to preoccupy an increasing number of investigators. The scientific literature of the following half century is, therefore, heavily interspersed with memoirs bearing upon this field. One may readily conjecture that the problems to be found there must have seemed almost endless in their abundance and variety. They must, moreover, have exerted a very strong fascination, if for no other reason, then because of the evident suggestion that in them lay an important key to an analytic mastery over the manifestations of nature.

Any review of the activities of the time show this to have been so. Important and difficult works were produced in great variety—among them, to name a few, investigations upon the oscillations of plates in vacuum or immersed in fluids, upon rods suspended from fixed or flexible mountings, upon jointed pendulums,

upon heavy dangling chains *etc. etc.* But among all these the researches upon the motions of tautly stretched elastic strings or wires were to be especially significant. Though these were perhaps of no greater mechanical importance than the discussion of many another problem, they did contemporaneously assume a quite disproportionate prominence, and they still do so in retrospect. They became, namely, a conspicuous point of impact for many divergent conceptions and opinions, and in the rôle thereby thrust upon them they became crucial to the development not only of mechanics but of mathematics over a much wider range. Inasmuch as the ideas at issue are in large measure our essential concern in this discussion, we shall have to give a considerable modicum of our attention to this problem of the string in subsequent pages.

From the very start of investigations upon them it seems to have been assumed that continuous material bodies could, for the purposes of analysis, be approximated by systems of discrete mass particles. The conception of an extensive body as composed of particles is a very natural one. Quite apart from whether this viewpoint was intended in the end to be philosophically maintained or not, it was apparently seen to suggest more strongly than any other a practicable mode of procedure. It requires no vivid imagination to picture the discrete system as merging into the continuous one as the size of the individual particles is diminished indefinitely while their number and density is correspondingly increased. If in the analysis of a finite approximating system the formulas can be so framed and dealt with that results are deducible from them without any actual specification of the number of the particles that are involved, then this number, retaining its generality, may be assumed to figure in the results in the way of a free parameter. This parameter may then logically be made the crux of limiting considerations, and through this means the physical transition from the discrete to the continuous configuration may be thought of as implemented mathematically by a passage from the finite to the infinite.

It may well be recognized that success in the execution of any such subtle program as this would be contingent both upon superior insight and a high level of technical skill on the part of the investigator. Such is the case, no less, with almost any application of mathematics to a phenomenon of nature. The actual responses of physical bodies to ponderable influences are invariably of a discouraging degree of complexity, and this is generally due much less to the influences that are primarily under scrutiny than to the many others that are inevitable and yet really incidental and effectively irrelevant. Were complete recognition to be given to all these latter, the formulation of a natural problem would, almost without exception, be quite submerged in intricacies of detail. On the physical side the fortuitous distracting features might well obscure the salient ones, and mathematically they might well throw the problem far beyond the range of possible solution.

At the very outset, therefore, it is usual and necessary to regard the physical configuration not as it actually is, but as it might be were it to be disencumbered of all but its primarily intrinsic features. The result of this is at once a simplifi-

cation and an idealization. It is this which is made the subject of analysis. The idealization is, of course, a departure from the physical reality, and this fact is certainly of no secondary importance. The original problem having been replaced by another, no immediate guarantee exists, of course, that results derived for the latter have a sufficient relevancy or applicability to the former. It is evident that with too great a divergence from the original all practical purpose would thus be defeated.

This is the consideration which checks the extent to which idealizing abstractions may be made. In determining upon these a fine sense of values and a depth of understanding are the indispensable guides. Whether in any case the permissible bounds were exceeded or not, must in the end ordinarily be decided after the fact by experiment. The applicability of the mathematically deduced theory stands or falls according as at strategic points its results agree or disagree with the data of observations. The decision, either way, implies no reflection whatever upon the theory's logical soundness. Its implications bear only upon the legitimacy of the simplifications which were made in the determination of its basis, namely upon the insight with which suitability and adequacy in the initial idealizing approximations were sensed.

CHAPTER 3

The loaded string. A natural phenomenon that is universally familiar and frequently observable in our surroundings, and to which, despite this, the attention is often sharply drawn, is that of the behavior of a stretched elastic string or wire in its response to a displacement from its state of equilibrium. In many cases this response is acoustically conspicuous, ranging from the hum of the heavy structural wire in the wind to the eloquent notes of the strings of a musical instrument. And then again, not rarely, the response is visually noticeable, being sometimes marked by so curious a feature as the presence of nodal points that maintain the state of rest while the string between them is in violent agitation.

The elastic string thus almost obtrudes itself upon the notice of the experimenter, and, having drawn his attention, recommends itself in many ways. Its geometrical configuration is of the simplest sort, permitting the identification of any of its points by a single dimension. Its motions are, under many circumstances, markedly regular, and respond promptly and prominently to adjust themselves to any quantitative modifications in the length, the tension, the weight or the initial state. It can hardly be looked upon as surprising, in virtue of all this, that the string should have been drawn under analysis at as early a time in the development of mechanics as that science became capable of dealing with continuous flexible bodies.

The finite discrete system of particles that most naturally approximates the continuous material string is suggested by the string of beads. More precisely, it is to be conceived of as comprised of any number n of equal concentrated mass particles, that are mounted respectively at equally spaced points along a string

which is itself weightless, though strong, perfectly flexible, and elastic. Such "loaded strings" were used as the conceptual bases of a variety of significant investigations. Euler and Daniel Bernoulli based upon them, in 1732 or 1733, studies of the motions of heavy dangling chains, and Euler, among other things, regarding the particles as oscillating longitudinally, built upon them in 1746 a theory of sound. [2] Mechanically simpler and chronologically even earlier than these researches, were certain investigations of John Bernoulli upon the transverse vibrations of a string with its end points fixed. We find in a consideration of this problem a convenient point of departure for our present discussion.

Consider, therefore, a loaded string such as has been described, with loading particles having a total mass M. Let this string be thought of as held taut under a tension T, the magnitude of this being so large that the ratio M/T is negligible. This last stipulation amounts, of course, to an idealization. Substantially its purpose is to discount the effects of gravity, and thus to concentrate the considerations upon those forces which spring from the tension alone. The divergence from physical actuality which this simplifying hypothesis sanctions is in many important instances of a very small amount. In the case of musical strings, for example, the ratio M/T which is to be ignored is quite commonly of a magnitude no greater than one one-thousandth.

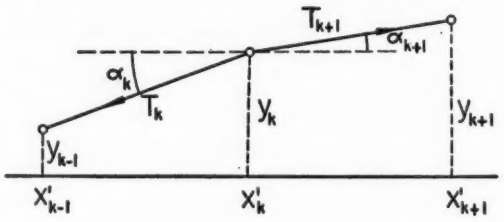
The initial state of the string in question is to be one of displacement from its equilibrium position, the forces which hold it in this state being coplanar and directed perpendicularly to the line through the string's fixed end points. The particles of the string thus lie along some plane curve. We shall choose the plane of this curve as the (x, y) plane, and shall take the x-axis through the string's end points with the origin at one of them. Under the hypotheses made, and in this system of reference, the x-axis then marks the string's equilibrium position. With l designating the length of the string, with $x_0 = 0$ its initial end, and with $x_1, x_2, \cdots, x_n$ the equilibrium abscissas of the particles, the formulas for these are to be

$$x_k = k\frac{l}{n}, \qquad k = 0, 1, 2, \cdots, n.$$

It will be noted that in this assignment one of the particles is allocated to be mounted at the point $x_n = l$ which is the terminal end of the string. The motivation for adopting this arrangement, which may well seem a bit curious, is not by any means profound. It is merely one having some formal advantages, since, as can be shown, it leads to somewhat simpler formulas. The rôle of the nth particle under these circumstances is, of course, an entirely passive one since the particle is constrained from all motion.

In the accompanying figure three adjacent particles and the tensions operating between them are schematically indicated. The position shown is one of displacement from the equilibrium, and the particle which in the latter state is located at the point $(x_k, 0)$ is here shown to have the coordinates (x_k', y_k). Simple

mechanical considerations based upon this figure readily lead to usable results, as we now propose to show.



The segment of the string which joins the $(k-1)$th and the kth particles is, as is clear from the figure, of the length $(x_k' - x_{k-1}')$ sec α_k. In the state of equilibrium this segment would be of the length l/n, and since, by the laws of elasticity, the respective lengths are to each other as the tensions, it must be concluded that

$$(x_k' - x_{k-1}') \sec \alpha_k : \frac{l}{n} = T_k : T,$$

or

$$(x_k' - x_{k-1}')Tn = lT_k \cos \alpha_k. \tag{3.1}$$

Now the forces by which the particles are initially held displaced are by hypothesis in the direction of the y-axis. The tensions in the string segments which balance them must, therefore, have x-components which annul each other in pairs, namely they must be such that

$$T_k \cos \alpha_k = T_{k+1} \cos \alpha_{k+1}, \qquad k = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1). \tag{3.2}$$

Since the right-hand members of the equations (3.1) are thus all equal, this equality must extend to the left-hand members as well. The differences $(x_k' - x_{k-1}')$ therefore have a common value, and since their sum is the length of the string this value is evidently l/n. It follows that for each k the relation $x_k' = x_k$ maintains, namely that each particle has when displaced the same abscissa as in equilibrium. The measures of the displacements are thus simply the ordinates y_k, and the relations (3.1) reduce to the forms

$$T_k \cos \alpha_k = T, \qquad k = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1). \tag{3.3}$$

From the initial position which has been described the string is now to be thought of as released, while in the state of rest, at an instant which is to be taken as the origin of time, $t=0$. The motion into which the kth particle springs is, of course, then governed by Newton's law

$$\frac{M}{n}\frac{d^2y_k}{dt^2} = F_k,$$

the force F_k acting upon it being shown by the figure to have the value

$$F_k = T_{k+1}\sin\alpha_{k+1} - T_k\sin\alpha_k.$$

By virtue of the relations (3.3) this formula is alternatively expressible as

$$F_k = T(\tan\alpha_{k+1} - \tan\alpha_k),$$

and in terms of the coördinates this is

$$F_k = T\left[\frac{(y_{k+1} - y_k) - (y_k - y_{k-1})}{(l/n)}\right].$$

Hence if the constant a^2 is defined by the relation

$$a^2 = \frac{lT}{M}, \tag{3.4}$$

the equations of motion are

$$\frac{d^2y_k}{dt^2} = \left(\frac{na}{l}\right)^2[y_{k+1} - 2y_k + y_{k-1}], \qquad k = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1). \tag{3.5}$$

In many respects the simplest modes of vibration which the string is capable of are those in which the ordinates y_k maintain constant ratios to each other. In these so-called *normal* vibrations all particles of the string traverse their positions of equilibrium in synchronism, and their displacements are expressible as functions of the time by formulas of the type

$$y_k(t) = u_k\phi(t), \qquad k = 0, 1, 2, \cdots, n, \tag{3.6}$$

in which the coefficients u_k are constants, with $u_0 = 0$, $u_n = 0$, and $\phi(t)$ is common to them all. The fact that the motion originates from the state of rest is then expressed by the relation $\phi'(0) = 0$.

Now the substitution of the forms (3.6) into the equations (3.5) gives to these latter the aspect

$$u_k\phi''(t) = \left(\frac{na}{l}\right)^2[u_{k+1} - 2u_k + u_{k-1}]\phi(t).$$

From this it is clear that the second derivative $\phi''(t)$ stands in a constant ratio to the function $\phi(t)$ itself, namely that

$$\frac{d^2\phi(t)}{dt^2} = -c^2\phi(t), \qquad \phi'(0) = 0, \tag{3.7}$$

the constant c being one for which the relations

$$u_{k+1} - 2u_k + u_{k-1} = -\left(\frac{cl}{na}\right)^2 u_k, \qquad k = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1),$$

together with $u_0 = 0$, $u_n = 0$ maintain. In terms of the coefficient q given by the formula

$$q = \left(\frac{cl}{na}\right)^2 - 2, \tag{3.8}$$

the values u_k must thus be solutions of the algebraic system of equations

$$\begin{aligned} u_0 &= 0, \\ u_{k+1} + qu_k + u_{k-1} &= 0, \qquad k = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1), \\ u_n &= 0. \end{aligned} \tag{3.9}$$

This system is neatly solvable (*c.f.* appendix I) having a non-trivial solution when and only when the coefficient q has one of the set of characteristic values $q_1, q_2, \cdots, q_{n-1}$, given by the formulas (I.5). The values of c which respectively correspond to these under the relation (3.8) are those of the set

$$c_\nu = \frac{2na}{l} \sin \frac{\nu\pi}{2n}, \qquad \nu = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1), \tag{3.10}$$

and the solution $u_{\nu,k}$ of the system (3.9) which exists for the value c_ν is obtainable from the formulas (I.6). It is

$$u_{\nu,k} = A_\nu \sin \frac{k\nu\pi}{n}, \qquad k = 0, 1, 2, \cdots, n,$$

with A_ν designating any constant. Since when $c = c_\nu$ the equations (3.7) are solved by the function

$$\phi(t) = \cos(c_\nu t),$$

or by a constant multiple of this, it may be drawn from the relations (3.6) that the ordinates in any normal vibration of the loaded string must accord with the formulas

$$y_k(t) = A_\nu \sin \frac{k\nu\pi}{n} \cos\left(\frac{2ant}{l} \sin \frac{\nu\pi}{2n}\right), \qquad k = 0, 1, 2, \cdots, n. \tag{3.11}$$

A loaded string carrying n particles is thus seen to be capable of sustaining $(n-1)$ distinct motions of the normal type, these being given by the formulas (3.11) in correspondence with the indices $\nu = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1)$.

Under assumptions that were somewhat more restrictive than those which we have here imposed, these normal vibrations were considered by John Bernoulli as early as the year 1728 in the cases of loaded strings in which particles up to eight in number were involved. [3]

CHAPTER 4

The equations of motion for the continuous string. When the differential equations (3.5) for the motions of the loaded string of n particles have once been deduced, two alternative modes of procedure for utilizing them toward the ultimate purpose of an analysis of the vibrations of a continuous string suggest themselves. On the one hand the equations may be integrated, as has already been done in the preceding chapter, and the resulting finite equations (3.11) may then be subjected to the limiting process in which the number n is indefinitely increased. On the other hand this limiting process may be applied directly to the system of equations (3.5) itself, and the integration of the result may then subsequently be undertaken. Both of these procedures were carried out in the first half of the eighteenth century. As we shall see, their results are of quite dissimilar aspects. Indeed they seemed to the men of the time to be no less than contradictory, to the extent that the proponents of either method saw no alternative but to reject the other. That no real dilemma was actually involved therein at all, came to its realization only half a century or more later. The clarifications of ideas by which the way out of the quandary was ultimately found are of especial interest to us here. We propose, therefore, to pursue the analysis of the two mentioned procedures to such points, at least, as afford some surveys of their conclusions.

Returning then, to begin with, to the equations (3.11), let any positive integer ν be chosen. Once chosen, ν is to be regarded as fixed. A loaded string with particles in number greater than ν, $(n>\nu)$, may then be thought of, and for the normal motions of such a string the equations (3.11) are derivable. Let the attention then be fixed upon any one of the particles of this string, and let its abscissa and ordinate be designated by x and $y(t, x)$. If this particle, in the enumeration that was adopted, is the kth one, the equalities

$$x = k\frac{l}{n}, \qquad y(t, x) = y_k(t), \tag{4.1}$$

evidently maintain. The respective kth equation of the set (3.11) may then be written in the manner

$$y(t, x) = A_\nu \sin\frac{\nu\pi x}{l}\cos\left[\theta_n\frac{\nu\pi at}{l}\right], \tag{4.2}$$

with the significance of θ_n given by the formula

$$\theta_n = \frac{\sin\left(\frac{\nu\pi}{2n}\right)}{\left(\frac{\nu\pi}{2n}\right)}. \tag{4.3}$$

Suppose now that the parameters n and k are increased, and indefinitely so, in any way such that the ratio k/n remains fixed. The point x then clearly remains invariant, and inasmuch as the formula (4.3) familiarly shows that the value θ_n approaches the limit 1 it follows that the relation (4.2) passes, as $n \to \infty$, into the limiting form

$$y(t, x) = A_\nu \sin \frac{\nu \pi x}{l} \cos \frac{\nu \pi a t}{l} . \tag{4.4}$$

This result is now evidently to be accepted as a formula applicable to the continuous string and representing a normal vibration of it. Inasmuch as the integer ν was initially open to an arbitrary choice, the inference that infinitely many such normal motions are possible and that they are given by the formulas (4.4) in conjunction with the indices $\nu = 1, 2, 3, \cdots$ is inevitable.

The simplest of the normal vibrations, namely that described by the formula (4.4) with $\nu = 1$ was deduced by Brook Taylor at as early a date as 1713. [4] In this motion the string vibrates without nodes and emits its fundamental tone. The existence of other normal motions, namely those associated by the formula (4.4) with other values of ν and in which the string emits its various over-tones, were known later to Daniel Bernoulli. We shall have occasion to return to this matter again.

The alternative procedure, to which we now turn, is associated most prominently with the names of d'Alembert and Euler. With the notational changes (4.1) and with the definition of Δx by the formula $\Delta x = l/n$, the kth one of the equations (3.5) may evidently be written in the form

$$\frac{\partial^2 y(t, x)}{\partial t^2} = a^2 \left[\frac{y(t, x + \Delta x) - 2y(t, x) + y(t, x - \Delta x)}{(\Delta x)^2} \right]. \tag{4.5}$$

Now whenever the function $y(t, x)$ is one which is twice differentiable as to x, its second partial derivative with respect to x is obtainable as the limit of the difference quotient within brackets on the right of the equality (4.5) as $\Delta x \to 0$, namely as $n \to \infty$. Basing himself upon this observation d'Alembert deduced in 1747 the partial differential equation

$$\frac{\partial^2 y(t, x)}{\partial t^2} = a^2 \frac{\partial^2 y(t, x)}{\partial x^2} , \tag{4.6}$$

for the motion of the continuous string. This result is of course still a standard. A solution of it, if it is to represent the ordinates of a string that is fastened at its end points upon the x-axis and that springs into motion at the time $t = 0$ from the state of rest and from the position of a curve $y = f(x)$, must, of course, also fulfill the conditions

$$
\begin{aligned}
y(t, 0) &= 0, \\
y(t, l) &= 0, \\
\frac{\partial y(t, x)}{\partial t}\Big]_{t=0} &= 0, \\
y(0, x) &= f(x).
\end{aligned}
\tag{4.7}
$$

The problem as thus formulated was solved by d'Alembert through the following ingenious use of familiar formulas from the calculus. [5]

In terms of the abbreviations

$$
\frac{\partial y}{\partial t} = p, \qquad \frac{\partial y}{\partial x} = q,
\tag{4.8}
$$

the differential equation (4.6) is expressible in the form

$$
\frac{\partial q}{\partial x} = \frac{1}{a^2}\frac{\partial p}{\partial t},
$$

whereas it is familiar that generally

$$
\frac{\partial q}{\partial t} = \frac{\partial p}{\partial x}.
$$

By the use of these relations the standard formula

$$
dq = \frac{\partial q}{\partial t}\,dt + \frac{\partial q}{\partial x}\,dx,
$$

may, however, be written thus

$$
dq = \frac{\partial p}{\partial x}\,dt + \frac{1}{a^2}\frac{\partial p}{\partial t}\,dx.
$$

From this together with the companion formula

$$
dp = \frac{\partial p}{\partial t}\,dt + \frac{\partial p}{\partial x}\,dx,
$$

it may be seen at once that

$$
\begin{aligned}
d\left(\frac{p}{a} + q\right) &= \left[\frac{1}{a}\frac{\partial p}{\partial x} + \frac{1}{a^2}\frac{\partial p}{\partial t}\right]d(at + x), \\
d\left(\frac{p}{a} - q\right) &= \left[\frac{-1}{a}\frac{\partial p}{\partial x} + \frac{1}{a^2}\frac{\partial p}{\partial t}\right]d(at - x).
\end{aligned}
\tag{4.9}
$$

Consider the first one of these equations. The quantity $(p/a+q)$ is a function of t and x. These variables are in turn determinable from the combinations

$(at+x)$ and $(at-x)$. It follows from this that it is permissible to regard the quantity as a function of the variables $(at+x)$ and $(at-x)$, and that accordingly its differential is given by the formula

$$d\left(\frac{p}{a}+q\right)=\frac{\partial\left(\frac{p}{a}+q\right)}{\partial(at+x)}d(at+x)+\frac{\partial\left(\frac{p}{a}+q\right)}{\partial(at-x)}d(at-x).$$

But by the evaluation (4.9) this differential includes no term in $d(at-x)$. The coefficient of this term must, therefore, be zero, namely

$$\frac{\partial\left(\frac{p}{a}+q\right)}{\partial(at-x)}=0.$$

This, however, is in effect the assertion that the quantity $(p/a+q)$ does not depend upon the variable $(at-x)$ but is a function of the remaining variable $(at+x)$ alone. A similar chain of reasoning shows that the quantity $(p/a-q)$ is a function of the variable $(at-x)$ alone, namely that with appropriate functions designated by ϕ and ψ,

$$\frac{p}{a}+q=\phi(at+x),$$

$$\frac{p}{a}-q=\psi(at-x).$$

If these relations are now multiplied respectively by the factors $(adt+dx)/2$ and $(adt-dx)/2$ and are then added, the result on the left of the equality is $pdt+q\,dx$, which is identified as dy. Thus

$$dy=\tfrac{1}{2}\phi(at+x)d(at+x)+\tfrac{1}{2}\psi(at-x)d(at-x).$$

In this formula each term is an exact differential. An integration is, therefore, possible and shows that

$$y(t,x)=\tfrac{1}{2}\Phi(at+x)+\tfrac{1}{2}\Psi(at-x), \tag{4.10}$$

the functions Φ and Ψ being indefinite integrals of ϕ and ψ respectively. With the attainment of the result (4.10) d'Alembert had deduced the fact that every solution of the partial differential equation (4.6) is of necessity expressible as the sum of a function of the variable $(at+x)$ and a function of the variable $(at-x)$. It is a simple matter to show conversely, by direct substitution, that if Φ and Ψ are any suitably differentiable functions, the formula (4.10) does in fact give a solution of the differential equation.

To apply to the particular case of the vibrating string the solution (4.10) must furthermore conform to the conditions (4.7). Of these the first one, which when applied to the relation (4.10) assumes the form

$$\tfrac{1}{2}\Phi(at) + \tfrac{1}{2}\Psi(at) = 0,$$

shows that the function Ψ must be identical with $-\Phi$. That being so the second condition takes the form

$$\tfrac{1}{2}\Phi(at + l) = \tfrac{1}{2}\Phi(at - l), \tag{4.11}$$

and since this is to be an identity in t it shows that the function Φ must be periodic with the span $2l$ as a period. The third condition (4.7) reduces to the relation

$$\Phi'(x) = \Phi'(-x).$$

Upon an integration this becomes

$$\Phi(x) = -\Phi(-x), \tag{4.12}$$

and thus characterizes Φ to be an odd function. The last condition, which must maintain over the string's length, reduces then to the relation

$$\Phi(x) = f(x), \qquad 0 \leqq x \leqq l. \tag{4.13}$$

In total it is to be concluded, therefore, that for the vibrating string

$$y(t, x) = \tfrac{1}{2}\Phi(at + x) - \tfrac{1}{2}\Phi(at - x), \tag{4.14}$$

every motion of the string being so representable with an appropriate function Φ. In the instance of any particular motion, in which the curve from which the string is released is $y = f(x)$, the function Φ that is concerned is determined over the interval $(0, l)$ by the relation (4.13) and is defined for all other arguments by its character of being odd and periodic.

CHAPTER 5

The d'Alembert-Euler-Bernoulli controversy. [6] The method of d'Alembert in his analysis of the problem of the vibrating string was also the method chosen by Euler. Superficially, therefore, the initial memoirs of these masters, written, as they were at short intervals of each other, differed mainly in their details. In their over-all aspect they resembled each other markedly, at least insofar as their formal features were concerned. Only below the surface did the lines of thought show themselves to be divergent, as sharply so, at points, as were the two men in the characters of their genius. Euler's temperament was an imaginative one. He looked for guidance in large measure to practical considerations and physical intuition, and combined with a phenomenal ingenuity an almost naive faith in the infallibility of mathematical formulas and the results of manipulations upon them. D'Alembert was a more critical mind, much less susceptible to conviction by formalisms. A personality of impeccable scientific integrity, he was never inclined to minimize short-comings that he recognized, be they in his own work or in that of others.

To Euler the solution of the problem of the string seemed definitive. Since any and every motion originating from the state of rest would necessarily stem from some initial shape of the string, and since he was willing to accept as the function $f(x)$ any distribution of values consistent with such a shape physically realizable, he maintained the solution of d'Alembert and himself to be the completely general one. The values $f(x)$ involved in the formula (4.13) he regarded as appropriately subject, if necessary, to graphical definition. To such interpretations d'Alembert took exception. He regarded the functional symbol as standing for an expression which could be constructed by the ordinary processes of algebra and the calculus from the independent variables. In having taken the ordinates of the string to be denotable in the form $y(t, x)$, he believed that the results could apply only to such motions as might be characterized by the fact that in them the string shapes at any two instants t_1 and t_2 are obtainable from one and the same formal expression $y(t, x)$ by giving to t the respective values. He saw no reason to suppose that all possible motions conform to this. Furthermore, inasmuch as the differential equation from which the solution emerges involves the derivative $\partial^2 y/\partial x^2$, he was unwilling to admit the applicability of the analysis to cases in which the function $f(x)$ is not twice differentiable. Finally, because of the relation (4.13) he insisted upon restricting the solution to instances in which the function $f(x)$ is periodic. That there might conceivably exist expressions $\Phi(x)$ and $f(x)$ yielding the same values over some specific interval but not persisting in this relationship for other values of the variable, was believed by neither d'Alembert nor Euler nor by any of their contemporaries.

A difference between d'Alembert and Euler lay in the fact that whereas the former was inclined to look upon the concepts of the function and the analytic expression as synonymous, the latter would not hold to this. Euler saw no reason, for instance, to rule out the possibility of releasing a string from the position of a curve made up of circular arcs of different radii, provided these arcs joined with each other continuously and with a continuously turning tangent line. It is evident that Euler had advanced measurably to the conception of an *arbitrary* curve. It is understandable, however, that d'Alembert should have declined to acknowledge the legitimacy of admitting such curves into consideration where the operations of the calculus were to be employed.

In 1755 a memoir of Daniel Bernoulli's upon the motions of the string turned the entire disagreement into new channels. Bernoulli, who had interested himself in acoustics, had recognized the relation between the several normal vibrations and the respective overtones which the string could be made to emit. It was a generally recognized fact at the time that a musical string ordinarily responds with a combination of its fundamental and overtones. Bernoulli had discovered that the motions involved in this do, in a very definite sense, retain their individuality—that in the entire motion the several normal vibrations are simply superposed upon each other. It was a relatively moderate step from this to the conception that all possible motions of a string are but

linear combinations of the normal vibrations, variations in the relative intensities of the overtone components producing the observable differences in the timbre of the tone. In terms of symbols, and with the use of the formulas (4.4), this comes to its formulation in the assertion that every motion of the string is expressible in the form

$$y(t, x) = \sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} A_\nu \sin \frac{\nu \pi x}{l} \cos \frac{\nu \pi a t}{l}, \tag{5.1}$$

with appropriate constant coefficients A_ν.

Neither Euler nor d'Alembert was inclined to accept this, and each made his rejoinder. Euler quickly recognized the fact that a motion representable in the form (5.1) would be one for which the initial ordinates have the values

$$\sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} A_\nu \sin \frac{\nu \pi x}{l}. \tag{5.2}$$

To assume that all motions are here involved would, he pointed out, come to the assertion that an arbitrary function $f(x)$ could be represented by a series of the type (5.2). Since among other things any expression (5.2) is odd and periodic, it seemed to Euler that he had reduced Bernoulli's claim to a manifest absurdity. That Bernoulli's result gave solutions—special ones—he did not deny. He had, in fact, made that discovery on his own account some years earlier.

D'Alembert, on his part, not only endorsed all of Euler's objections but went in fact well beyond them. He was unwilling to concede even that any and every odd and suitably periodic function could be represented by an expression (5.2), maintaining, in particular, that the function would need to be twice differentiable since that is so of all terms of the series. Bernoulli's analysis, and especially his passage from the finite case of the loaded string to the continuous one, had been at best sketchy and fragmentary. His opponents found much that could properly be rejected in that.

On the whole the objections left Bernoulli unshaken. In replying to Euler's claim of absurdity he referred to the fact that any finite sum of m terms from the expression (5.2) could, by an appropriate determination of the coefficients, be made to coincide in value with any given function $f(x)$ at any chosen set of points m in number. He saw no reason, therefore, for rejecting the possibility that the series (5.2), involving infinitely many coefficients as it does, might not coincide with an arbitrary function at an infinity of points. This viewpoint was indeed a worthy one. A development of it will concern us in the following chapter.

The three cornered polemic spreads itself through the mathematical literature over a period of more than a decade. Since no one of the contenders succeeded in convincing another, the upshot of the matter at the time was negligible. Each of the disputants was in part right and in part wrong. Time has given the lion's share of its endorsements to Bernoulli.

CHAPTER 6

Lagrange's solution of Bernoulli's problem in curve fitting. [7] The fact invoked by Bernoulli, that an arbitrarily given curve is representable at any finite set of abscissas by a suitable segment of a series (5.2), is one of considerable importance both from the theoretical and practical standpoints. It devolves, of course, upon the possibility of determining the coefficients c_k in a formula

$$y = \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} c_k \sin \frac{k\pi x}{l},$$

so that the curve here represented may pass through a prescribed set of points (x_ν, F_ν), $\nu = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1)$, the abscissas of which lie upon the interval $(0, l)$. Alternatively stated it comes to the fact that with an arbitrary assignment of constants F_ν the system of equations

$$\sum_{k=1}^{n-1} c_k \sin \frac{k\pi x_\nu}{l} = F_\nu, \qquad \nu = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1), \tag{6.1}$$

is solvable for the values c_k.

The solution of any linear algebraic system of equations, and hence in particular of this system, is, of course, possible by elementary procedures. Such a frontal attack upon it by the familiar method of determinants leads, however, through much tedious and protracted computation whenever the number of equations is large. The solution, moreover, is not likely to emerge from such manipulations in any neat or elegant form. At the very beginning of his career, while he was still in his early twenties, Lagrange concerned himself with this problem and gave solutions of it for both the cases in which the abscissas are equally and unequally spaced. It is the former of these which is of peculiar pertinence to our discussion, and although it appears in Lagrange's work incidentally to the wider investigation with which we shall be concerned in the next chapter, a self-contained exposition of it is possible and is to be given here. It is a prime merit of this solution that it shows clearly how it depends upon the number n of points involved, and that it is therefore excellently adapted to an investigation in which this number is ultimately to be varied and to be allowed to become infinite.

Let the abscissas x_ν be identified again thus

$$x_\nu = \frac{\nu l}{n}, \qquad \nu = 0, 1, 2, \cdots, n, \tag{6.2}$$

and let any one of the integers $1, 2, \cdots, (n-1)$ be chosen and designated j. If the equations (6.1) are multiplied by the respective constant of an undetermined set $D_{j,\nu}$ and are then added, the result is the relation

$$\sum_{\nu=1}^{n-1}\sum_{k=1}^{n-1} D_{j,\nu}c_k \sin\frac{k\pi x_\nu}{l} = \sum_{\nu=1}^{n-1} D_{j,\nu}F_\nu.$$

Since $kx_\nu = \nu x_k$ this can be given the alternative form

$$\sum_{k=1}^{n-1} \Phi_j(x_k)c_k = \sum_{\nu=1}^{n-1} D_{j,\nu}F_\nu, \tag{6.3}$$

the function Φ_j herein being defined by the formula

$$\Phi_j(x) \equiv \sum_{\nu=1}^{n-1} D_{j,\nu} \sin\frac{\nu\pi x}{l}. \tag{6.4}$$

Now each function $\sin(\nu\pi x/l)$ in this relation is expressible as the product of $\sin(\pi x/l)$ by a polynomial of the degree $(\nu-1)$ in $\cos(\pi x/l)$ (*cf.* appendix II). The complete function Φ_j may therefore be similarly expressed, namely thus

$$\Phi_j(x) = \sin\frac{\pi x}{l} P_{n-2}\left(\cos\frac{\pi x}{l}\right), \tag{6.5}$$

with P_{n-2} designating a polynomial of the degree $(n-2)$. The coefficients of this polynomial depend, of course, upon the multipliers $D_{j,\nu}$, and these have not thus far been specified. It is proposed now to specify them so that the function $\Phi_j(x)$ may be zero at each of the points x_k with the specific exception of x_j, namely so that

$$\Phi_j(x_k) = 0, \qquad k \neq j. \tag{6.6}$$

Assuming this to be possible, it is clear from the equation (6.5) that each one of the $(n-2)$ values $\cos(\pi x_\nu/l)$, $\nu \neq j$ must then be a root of P_{n-2}, and that each corresponding difference $(\cos\pi x/l - \cos\pi x_\nu/l)$ must therefore be a factor. The factors are thus all accounted for, and with an appropriate constant α the formula (6.5) may accordingly be written

$$\Phi_j(x) = \alpha \sin\frac{\pi x}{l} \prod_{\nu=1,\nu\neq j}^{n-1}\left(\cos\frac{\pi x}{l} - \cos\frac{\pi x_\nu}{l}\right). \tag{6.7}$$

As is shown by the formula (II.1), however, a relation

$$\sin\frac{n\pi x}{l} = \sin\frac{\pi x}{l}\, p_{n-1}\left(\cos\frac{\pi x}{l}\right)$$

also maintains, and since the left-hand member of this is zero at each point x_ν without exception, the function $p_{n-1}(\cos\pi x/l)$ must admit as a factor each of

the differences $(\cos \pi x/l - \cos \pi x_\nu/l)$. The factors being thus again all accounted for, it follows that

$$\sin \frac{n\pi x}{l} = \beta \sin \frac{\pi x}{l} \prod_{\nu=1}^{n-1} \left(\cos \frac{\pi x}{l} - \cos \frac{\pi x_\nu}{l} \right),$$

with β standing for some constant that is not zero. From this together with the evaluation (6.7) it appears that

$$\left(\cos \frac{\pi x}{l} - \cos \frac{\pi x_j}{l} \right) \Phi_j(x) = \frac{\alpha}{\beta} \sin \frac{n\pi x}{l}, \tag{6.8}$$

namely, because of the formula (6.4), that

$$\sum_{\nu=1}^{n-1} D_{j,\nu} \sin \frac{\nu\pi x}{l} \left(\cos \frac{\pi x}{l} - \cos \frac{\pi x_j}{l} \right) - \frac{\alpha}{\beta} \sin \frac{n\pi x}{l} = 0.$$

This equation may be reduced by the use of the familiar relation

$$\sin \frac{\nu\pi x}{l} \cos \frac{\pi x}{l} = \frac{1}{2} \sin \frac{(\nu+1)\pi x}{l} + \frac{1}{2} \sin \frac{(\nu-1)\pi x}{l},$$

and by a rearrangement of its terms, to appear in the form

$$\sum_{k=1}^{n-1} [D_{j,k+1} + q_j D_{j,k} + D_{j,k-1}] \sin \frac{k\pi x}{l} + \left[D_{j,n-1} - \frac{2\alpha}{\beta} \right] \sin \frac{n\pi x}{l} = 0, \tag{6.9}$$

the coefficient q_j being specifically

$$q_j = -2 \cos \frac{\pi x_j}{l}, \tag{6.10}$$

and $D_{j,0}$ and $D_{j,n}$ being zero.

The equation (6.9) is identically fulfilled if the multipliers $D_{j,k}$ satisfy the system

$$\begin{aligned} &D_{j,0} = 0, \\ &D_{j,k+1} + q_j D_{j,k} + D_{j,k-1} = 0, \qquad k = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1), \\ &D_{j,n} = 0, \end{aligned}$$

and furthermore

$$D_{j,n-1} = \frac{2\alpha}{\beta}.$$

This system is precisely that which is discussed in the appendix I, the coefficient (6.10) being that one of the values (I. 5) for which the system admits the solu-

(I. 6) with $\nu=j$. The free coefficient A_j in this may be determined, moreover, to yield the value prescribed above for $D_{j,n-1}$, and is thus found to have the value $2\alpha/\beta \sin (n-1)j\pi/l$, or because of the relations (6.2)

$$A_j = (-1)^{j+1} \frac{2\alpha}{\beta \sin \dfrac{\pi x_j}{l}}.$$

The evaluation of the multipliers which thus results is

$$D_{j,k} = (-1)^{j+1} \frac{2\alpha \sin \dfrac{k\pi x_j}{l}}{\beta \sin \dfrac{\pi x_j}{l}}, \tag{6.11}$$

and with these the equation (6.3) reduces by virtue of the values (6.6) to the form

$$\Phi_j(x_j)c_j = \sum_{\nu=1}^{n-1} D_{j,\nu}F_\nu. \tag{6.12}$$

It only remains, therefore, to determine the value of $\Phi_j(x_j)$, and this may be done as follows. The formula for $\Phi_j(x)$, as it is given by the equation (6.8), is indeterminate at $x=x_j$. By an application of l'Hospital's rule, however, its limiting value is found to be

$$\frac{n\alpha \cos \dfrac{n\pi x_j}{l}}{-\beta \sin \dfrac{\pi x_j}{l}},$$

namely because of the definitions (6.2),

$$\Phi_j(x_j) = (-1)^{j+1} \frac{n\alpha}{\beta \sin \dfrac{\pi x_j}{l}}.$$

This result, together with the evaluations (6.11), causes a final reduction of the relation (6.12) to the form

$$c_j = \frac{2}{n} \sum_{\nu=1}^{n-1} F_\nu \sin \frac{\nu\pi x_j}{l}, \tag{6.13}$$

and therewith the coefficients in the equations (6.1) have been determined.

CHAPTER 7

Lagrange and the vibrating string. [8] In the controversy over the problem of the vibrating string Lagrange was inclined on the whole to enlist himself upon the side of Euler. To support himself in this position he undertook to re-examine afresh the behavior of the weightless loaded string with an unspecified number of particles, his explicit purpose being to elicit from this a proof that in the case of the continuous string no restrictions upon the shape of the curve marking the initial position are requisite. His method in this has become a standard one. As do the deductions of the preceding chapter, it hinges primarily upon an introduction of undetermined multipliers. By this means he carried through, as we shall see, a general integration of the differential equations for the string's motion, and thus displayed in terms of explicit formulas the dependence of the string's position at any instant upon its initial shape.

The differential equations for the particles of the loaded string of the length l under the tension T, with n particles of total mass M located respectively at the points

$$x_k = \frac{kl}{n}, \qquad (k = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1) \tag{7.1}$$

were deduced in chapter 3 and are given under (3.5). If the initial ordinates of the particles are denoted by f_k, and if the particles spring at $t=0$ from the state of rest in these positions, the boundary relations to which the differential equations are to be subjected are

$$\begin{aligned} y_k(0) &= f_k, \\ \left.\frac{dy_k(t)}{dt}\right]_{t=0} &= 0, \qquad k = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1). \end{aligned} \tag{7.2}$$

Let the equations (3.5) be multiplied respectively by unspecified constants M_k. The addition of them then results in the single equation

$$\sum_{k=1}^{n-1} M_k \frac{d^2y_k}{dt^2} = \left(\frac{na}{l}\right)^2 \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} M_k[y_{k+1} - 2y_k + y_{k-1}],$$

and this, under a re-grouping of its terms, together with the evaluations $M_0=0$, $M_n=0$, takes on alternatively the form

$$\frac{d^2}{dt^2}\sum_{k=1}^{n-1} M_k y_k = \left(\frac{na}{l}\right)^2 \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} [M_{k+1} - 2M_k + M_{k-1}]y_k. \tag{7.3}$$

Consider now the possibility of so choosing the multipliers M_k as to make the corresponding terms of the two sums in the equation maintain a fixed ratio to each other. With a constant of proportionality γ, the condition upon the multi-

pliers is then this, that they may comprise a solution of the linear algebraic system

$$M_0 = 0,$$

$$M_{k+1} - 2M_k + M_{k-1} = \gamma M_k, \quad k = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1), \tag{7.4}$$

$$M_n = 0.$$

This, however, is precisely the system (I. 1) of the appendix I, with $(-\gamma-2)$ in the rôle of the coefficient q. The values of γ for which the system is non-trivially solvable are thus found from the relations (I. 5) to be $(n-1)$ in number, namely $\gamma=\gamma_\nu$, $\nu=1, 2, \cdots, (n-1)$, with

$$\gamma_\nu = -4 \sin^2 \frac{\nu\pi}{2n}. \tag{7.5}$$

Upon designating by the symbols $M_{\nu,k}$ those multipliers M_k which satisfy the system when γ has the value (7.5), we find from the formulas (I. 6) the respective evaluations

$$M_{\nu,k} = A_\nu \sin \frac{k\nu\pi}{n}, \qquad k = 0, 1, 2, \cdots, n, \tag{7.6}$$

the coefficient A_ν being arbitrary.

Let $\sigma_\nu(t)$ be used now as an abbreviation in the sense

$$\sigma_\nu(t) \equiv \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} M_{\nu,k} y_k(t). \tag{7.7}$$

The differential equation (7.3) with its boundary relations (7.2) may then be written in the form

$$\frac{d^2\sigma_\nu}{dt^2} = \gamma_\nu \left(\frac{na}{l}\right)^2 \sigma_\nu,$$

$$\sigma_\nu(0) = \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} M_{\nu,k} f_k,$$

$$\left.\frac{d\sigma_\nu}{dt}\right]_{t=0} = 0.$$

This is a differential system which is easily solvable by elementary means. Its solution is

$$\sigma_\nu(t) = \left(\sum_{k=1}^{n-1} f_k M_{\nu,k}\right) \cos\left(\sqrt{-\gamma_\nu}\, \frac{nat}{l}\right),$$

namely, in terms of the evaluations (7.5), (7.6), and (7.7),

$$(7.8)\qquad \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} y_k(t) \sin \frac{k\pi x_\nu}{l} = \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} f_k \sin \frac{\nu\pi x_k}{l} \cos\left(\frac{2nat}{l} \sin \frac{\nu\pi}{2n}\right).$$

Inasmuch as the index ν is free to take the values $1, 2, \cdots, (n-1)$, this is a system of $(n-1)$ equations.

In structure the system (7.8) is evidently of the form (6.1) with the values $y_k(t)$ in the place of unknowns c_k. Its solution is therefore given by the formulas (6.13) to be

$$(7.9)\qquad y_j(t) = \frac{2}{n} \sum_{\nu=1}^{n-1} \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} f_k \sin \frac{\nu\pi x_k}{l} \sin \frac{\nu\pi x_j}{l} \cos\left(\frac{2nat}{l} \sin \frac{\nu\pi}{2n}\right),$$
$$j = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1).$$

With this result Lagrange's integration of the equations of motion is complete.

It is suggestive for our purposes to consider the formalisms of a passage from the discretely loaded string to the continuous one upon the basis of Lagrange's formulas. If in the equations (7.9) the notational changes indicated by the substitutions of x and $y(t, x)$ for x_j and $y_j(t)$, of s_k and $f(s_k)$ for x_k and f_k, and of Δs for l/n, are made, the formula assumes the aspect

$$y(t, x) = \frac{2}{l} \sum_{\nu=1}^{n-1} \left(\sum_{k=1}^{n-1} f(s_k) \sin \frac{\nu\pi s_k}{l} \Delta s \right) \sin \frac{\nu\pi x}{l} \cos \left[\frac{\nu\pi at}{l} \cdot \frac{\sin\left(\frac{\nu\pi}{2n}\right)}{\left(\frac{\nu\pi}{2n}\right)} \right].$$

As n is indefinitely increased the relation

$$\lim \frac{\sin\left(\frac{\nu\pi}{2n}\right)}{\left(\frac{\nu\pi}{2n}\right)} = 1,$$

maintains for each value of ν and from the very definition of the definite integral

$$\lim_{n\to\infty} \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} f(s_k) \sin \frac{\nu\pi s_k}{l} \Delta s = \int_0^l f(s) \sin \frac{\nu\pi s}{l} ds.$$

These relations suggest as the limiting form of the solution (7.9) the formula

$$(7.10)\qquad y(t, x) = \sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} \left(\frac{2}{l} \int_0^l f(s) \sin \frac{\nu\pi s}{l} ds \right) \sin \frac{\nu\pi x}{l} \cos \frac{\nu\pi at}{l}.$$

It will be noted at once that this is precisely of the type of the solution (5.1) for

which Bernoulli had insisted upon holding out. In it the initial position of the string is along the curve whose ordinates are $f(x)$. At the instant $t=0$ the formula (7.10) thus reduces to the form

$$(7.11) \qquad f(x) = \sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty}\left(\frac{2}{l}\int_0^l f(s)\sin\frac{\nu\pi s}{l}\,ds\right)\sin\frac{\nu\pi x}{l}.$$

The representability of an "arbitrary" function by a series of sines in precisely the manner (1.3), (1.4), would hereby seem to be unmistakably presaged.

Although Lagrange carried out a limiting analysis upon his formula (7.9), it varied in some respects from that outlined above. His comparative result was the relation

$$(7.12) \qquad y(t, x) = \frac{2}{l}\int_0^l\left(\sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty}\sin\frac{\nu\pi s}{l}\sin\frac{\nu\pi x}{l}\cos\frac{\nu\pi at}{l}\right)f(s)ds,$$

which differs from (7.10) in having the order of the integration and summation reversed. This form has the disadvantage of involving a series which is obviously divergent, a matter which was readily seized upon by opposing critics. Beyond that, both limiting considerations are open to criticism upon a number of accounts, for they fail to distinguish between the results of analytical operations upon an infinite series as a whole and upon the terms of the series individually. These distinctions, so essential to rigor, were but imperfectly understood at the time.

While in the manner shown the formula (7.9) could easily have led to the conclusion (7.11), it remains a fact that it did not do so. In deducing the form (7.12) Lagrange was bent upon a different purpose, wholly remote from that of proving any such a theory as would be implied by the relation (7.11). Indeed, when such a theory was announced by Fourier more than a half century later, the then aged Lagrange is said to have remained incredulous of it.

CHAPTER 8

Euler's determination of the coefficients. In the latter half of the eighteenth century the properties of trigonometrical series were very much to the fore of mathematical interest, and numerous memoirs were written during that time upon one phase or another of the subject of the representability of functions by means of such series. In the main, however, these papers advanced the general theory but little. They may well be left aside in the present discussion as of only subordinate interest. A conspicuous exception to this, however, is a work of Euler's which he appears to have written in the year 1777, although its publication was deferred until 1793, some years after his death. Concerned with functions known upon some grounds or other to be representable in terms of a cosine series of the type (1.5), Euler deduced in this work the formula (1.6) for the coefficients [9].

If $f(x)$ is any function which in terms of the variable ξ, under the relation $\xi=\cos \pi x/l$, is expansible for $-1\leqq\xi\leqq 1$ in a convergent power series $\sum_{j=0}^{\infty}c_j\xi^j$, then $f(x)$ clearly admits of representation by a cosine power series of the form

$$f(x) = \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} c_j \cos^j \frac{\pi x}{l}, \tag{8.1}$$

over the interval $(0, l)$. For each term in this, however, there maintains a respective trigonometric identity (*cf.* appendix III), namely

$$\cos^j \frac{\pi x}{l} = \frac{1}{2^{j-1}} \sum_{\mu=0}^{[j/2]} \binom{j}{\mu} \cos \frac{(j-2\mu)\pi x}{l},$$

with $[j/2]$ designating the greatest integer not exceeding $j/2$. The substitution of these evaluations into the equation (8.1) and the subsequent collection of terms of like character, give the equation formally the aspect

$$f(x) = \frac{a_0}{2} + \sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} a_\nu \cos \frac{\nu\pi x}{l}. \tag{8.2}$$

This is the type (1.5). It will be clear that a rather extensive class of functions $f(x)$ fulfills the assumptions that are basic to this reasoning.

The argument given, although it is adequate to permit an inference of the *form* of the representation (8.2), is readily seen to be quite far from being practical. It yields neither an easily applicable nor a generally lucid method by which the coefficients a_ν therein may be quantitatively evaluated. Since the series converges, it may, of course, be inferred that

$$\lim_{\nu\to\infty} a_\nu = 0. \tag{8.3}$$

From this slender source Euler succeeded in deducing an evaluation of the contants a_ν which is directly referable to the function $f(x)$ in question.

Let the symbol $n_{\sigma,\tau}$ for any integer n and any indices σ, τ, be defined to have the values

$$n_{\sigma,\tau} = \begin{cases} n, & \text{if } \sigma \equiv \tau \pmod{2n} \\ 0, & \text{if } \sigma \not\equiv \tau \pmod{2n}. \end{cases} \tag{8.4}$$

There is, then, a trigonometric evaluation (*cf.* appendix IV) to the effect that

$$\sum_{\mu=1}^{n-1} \cos \frac{\mu\sigma\pi}{n} = \frac{-1}{2}[1 + \cos \sigma\pi] + n_{\sigma,0}. \tag{8.5}$$

From this a certain related formula can be easily deduced. If the equation (8.5) is written successively with σ replaced by $(\nu+k)$ and by $(\nu-k)$, an addition of the results yields directly the equality

$$\sum_{\mu=1}^{n-1}\left[\cos\frac{\mu(\nu+k)\pi}{n}+\cos\frac{\mu(\nu-k)\pi}{n}\right]$$
$$=-\left[1+\tfrac{1}{2}\cos(\nu+k)\pi+\tfrac{1}{2}\cos(\nu-k)\pi\right]+n_{\nu+k,0}+n_{\nu-k,0},$$

and this is contractible in an obvious fashion into the formula

$$(8.6)\qquad \sum_{\mu=1}^{n-1} 2\cos\frac{\mu k\pi}{n}\cos\frac{\mu\nu\pi}{n}=-\left[1+\cos k\pi\cos\nu\pi\right]+n_{\nu,k}+n_{\nu,-k}.$$

Consider now the representation (8.2). If this is multiplied by the factor $2\cos(\mu k\pi/n)$ and is then evaluated at $x=\mu l/n$, it yields the equalities

$$2f\left(\frac{\mu l}{n}\right)\cos\frac{\mu k\pi}{n}=a_0\cos\frac{\mu k\pi}{n}+\sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty}a_\nu 2\cos\frac{\mu\nu\pi}{n}\cos\frac{\mu k\pi}{n}.$$

When these are summed with respect to μ the constants a_0 and a_ν appear with coefficients that are given by the formulas (8.5) and (8.6) respectively. It is thus found that

$$(8.7)\qquad 2\sum_{\mu=1}^{n-1}f\left(\frac{\mu l}{n}\right)\cos\frac{\mu k\pi}{n}=\frac{-a_0}{2}\left[1+\cos k\pi\right]-\sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty}a_\nu\left[1+\cos k\pi\cos\nu\pi\right]$$
$$+a_0n_{k,0}+\sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty}a_\nu\left[n_{\nu,k}+n_{\nu,-k}\right].$$

This relation can be materially reduced. In the first place it will be found on the basis of the definitions (8.4) that for $k=0$, or for $k>0$ and $n>k$,

$$a_0n_{k,0}+\sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty}a_\nu\left[n_{\nu,k}+n_{\nu,-k}\right]=n\left[a_k+\sum_{\lambda=1}^{\infty}\left(a_{2n\lambda-k}+a_{2n\lambda+k}\right)\right].$$

In the second place the formula (8.2) itself yields the equation

$$f(0)+f(l)\cos k\pi=\frac{a_0}{2}\left[1+\cos k\pi\right]+\sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty}a_\nu\left[1+\cos k\pi\cos\nu\pi\right].$$

With these evaluations, however, the formula (8.7) is simplified into the form

$$(8.8)\qquad 2\sum_{\mu=1}^{n-1}f\left(\frac{\mu l}{n}\right)\cos\frac{k\mu\pi}{n}=na_k-\left[f(0)+f(l)\cos k\pi\right]+n\sum_{\lambda=1}^{\infty}\left(a_{2n\lambda-k}+a_{2n\lambda+k}\right).$$

Let the notational substitutions $s_\mu=\mu l/n, \Delta s=l/n$, now be introduced. These, together with a division by n, give to the equation (8.8) the form

$$\frac{2}{l}\sum_{\mu=1}^{n-1}f(s_\mu)\cos\frac{k\pi s_\mu}{l}\Delta s=a_k-\frac{1}{n}\left[f(0)+f(l)\cos k\pi\right]+\sum_{\lambda=1}^{\infty}\left(a_{2n\lambda-k}+a_{2n\lambda+k}\right).$$

In this n is now to be permitted to become infinite. Since each term $a_{2n\lambda \pm k}$ in the final sum approaches zero by virtue of the relation (8.3), and the term in $1/n$ does likewise, the right-hand member of the equation has as its limit a_k. The limit of the left-hand member being a definite integral, the conclusion is that

$$\frac{2}{l}\int_0^l f(s)\cos\frac{k\pi s}{l}\,ds = a_k. \tag{8.9}$$

Herewith the problem was solved.

Once in possession of the formula (8.9), Euler recognized the more direct manner in which he might have found it, and by means of which a verification of it might be made. This is, namely, the procedure now generally familiar, of multiplying the representation (8.2) by the factor $\cos(k\pi x/l)$, integrating it then term by term and applying the elementary evaluations

$$\int_0^l \cos\frac{\nu\pi x}{l}\cos\frac{k\pi x}{l}\,dx = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{if } \nu \neq k, \\ l/2, & \text{if } \nu = k \neq 0, \\ l, & \text{if } \nu = k = 0. \end{cases} \tag{8.10}$$

To this day the constants a_k as given by the formulas (8.9) are still widely known as the "Euler coefficients" of the function $f(x)$. Such an attribution seems, however, to be somewhat over-generous if representations (8.2) of *arbitrary* functions are in question. Euler was consciously concerned only with such functions as were known upon other grounds to be representable in a cosine series. The crucial observation that the formulas (8.9) are significant for functions of a much wider class than those which, for instance, are representable in the manner (8.1) apparently escaped him. There is no evidence, either in this connection or in any other, that he ever receded from his opposition to Bernoulli's claim that arbitrary functions submit to trigonometric representation

CHAPTER 9

Fourier and the theory of heat. In the interior of a material body heat is in general distributed in a manner that is both non-uniform and fluctuating—that is to say with temperatures that vary from point to point and from time to time. The distribution of temperatures throughout a body is, therefore, naturally determined by a function of the coördinates of position and time. What the precise form of this function is, in any particular case, depends in part upon the thermal properties of the material of which the body is constituted—its density, specific heat, and conductivity—but also in large part upon the instantaneous state in which the body finds itself at some specific time, and upon the conditions which thereafter maintain upon its surface.

In the early years of the nineteenth century Fourier devoted himself to an analysis of this temperature function τ, and deduced from physical fundamentals [10] the fact that it must satisfy a partial differential equation of the form

$$\nabla^2\tau = \kappa^2 \frac{\partial \tau}{\partial t}. \tag{9.1}$$

In this κ^2 is a positive constant whose value is determined by the thermal properties of the material, whilc $\nabla^2\tau$ is the so-called "Laplacian of τ." In terms of rectangular coördinates this differential expression is

$$\frac{\partial^2\tau}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2\tau}{\partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^2\tau}{\partial z^2},$$

if all three of the coordinates x, y, z, are significant, or, more simply

$$\frac{\partial^2\tau}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2\tau}{\partial y^2} \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{\partial^2\tau}{\partial x^2}$$

respectively, if the only space coördinates are x, y, or merely x alone. A temperature function must accordingly solve a partial differential equation such as (9.1). In any specific instance it must be *that* solution of this equation which takes on those values which apply at some specific instant t, and which furthermore fulfills upon the body's surface the thermal relations that maintain there.

A simple and familiar physical formulation illustrates this and will serve also to show the relevancy of this subject of the flow of heat to the basic matter before us, namely that of the representation of arbitrary functions by the means of trigonometric series. Consider a homogeneous material bar in the shape of a right cylinder of the length l and of any cross section. We may choose our coordinate system so that the direction of this bar is that of the x-axis with the end faces of the bar located at the points $x=0$ and $x=l$. Let it be supposed now that at some specific instant, which may be designated as $t=0$, the temperatures at all points within the bar having the abscissa x have the common value $f(x)$. From this instant onward each end face of the bar is to be held constantly at the temperature zero, while the lateral surface is insulated against the passage of heat. Except in the trivial case in which $f(x)$ is everywhere zero, heat will flow within the bar, and the lines of flow will be parallel to the x-axis. The problem is to determine the temperature at any point of the bar at any instant subsequent to the initial one, namely to determine the function $\tau(x, t)$ for $0<x<l$, and $t>0$. The relations from which this is to be done are in this case evidently the differential equation

$$\frac{\partial^2 \tau}{\partial x^2} = \kappa^2 \frac{\partial \tau}{\partial t}, \tag{9.2}$$

the boundary relations

$$\begin{aligned} \tau(0, t) &= 0, \\ \tau(l, t) &= 0, \qquad t > 0, \end{aligned} \tag{9.3}$$

and the initial condition

$$\tau(x, 0) = f(x), \quad 0 < x < l. \tag{9.4}$$

Fourier's method of attack upon a problem such as this is one that is still widely current in practice, namely the method of the "separation of variables." Let us, to begin with, seek a function $\tau_\nu(x, t)$ to fulfill the equations (9.2) and (9.3), while being of the form of a product of a function of the single variable x by a function of the single variable t, namely

$$\tau_\nu(x, t) = \phi_\nu(x)\psi_\nu(t). \tag{9.5}$$

Upon substituting this form into the equations in question, it is found that these are satisfied if the function $\phi_\nu(x)$ fulfills the system of relations

$$\begin{aligned} &\text{(i)} && \frac{d^2}{dx^2}\phi_\nu(x) + \lambda_\nu \kappa^2 \phi_\nu(x) = 0, \\ &\text{(ii)} && \phi_\nu(0) = 0, \\ &\text{(iii)} && \phi_\nu(l) = 0, \end{aligned} \tag{9.6}$$

with λ_ν designating a constant, provided that with this same constant the function $\psi_\nu(t)$ fulfills the equation

$$\frac{d}{dt}\psi_\nu(t) + \lambda_\nu \psi_\nu(t) = 0. \tag{9.7}$$

As a solution of the ordinary differential equation (9.6i) the function $\phi_\nu(x)$ must familiarly be of the form

$$\phi_\nu(x) = b_\nu \sin\left(\sqrt{\lambda_\nu}\,\kappa x + \gamma_\nu\right),$$

in which b_ν and γ_ν may be any constants. It will fulfill the condition (9.6ii) if $\gamma_\nu = 0$, and then also the condition (9.6iii) if $\sqrt{\lambda_\nu}$ is any multiple of the constant $\pi/\kappa l$, namely, when

$$\lambda_\nu = \left(\frac{\nu\pi}{\kappa l}\right)^2, \tag{9.8}$$

with ν an integer. The associated solution of the equation (9.7) is then clearly

$$\psi_\nu(t) = e^{-(\nu^2\pi^2/\kappa^2 l^2)t}.$$

Through the formula (9.5) it has thus been found that the equations (9.2) and (9.3) are satisfied by the function

$$\tau_\nu(x, t) = b_\nu e^{-(\nu^2\pi^2/\kappa^2 l^2)t} \sin \frac{\nu\pi x}{l}, \tag{9.9}$$

in fact by each of the infinite set of functions obtained from this formula by setting $\nu = 1, 2, 3, \cdots$.

Now it is a characteristic property of linear equations or of any system of such, that the sum of any set of solutions is itself a solution. One is motivated thus to infer from the set (9.9) a formal solution having the structure

$$\tau(x,t) = \sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} b_\nu e^{-(\nu^2\pi^2/\kappa^2 l^2)t} \sin \frac{\nu\pi x}{l}. \tag{9.10}$$

Aside from questions of convergence which are clearly to be raised in this connection, a primary matter still to be dealt with is the fulfillment of the condition (9.4) whatever the function $f(x)$ may be. Upon substituting the value $t = 0$ into the formula (9.10), this is seen to devolve into the relation

$$\sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} b_\nu \sin \frac{\nu\pi x}{l} = f(x), \qquad 0 < x < l. \tag{9.11}$$

The question of the representability of any function $f(x)$ in a series of sines is thus clearly brought into issue.

We propose to review in the following chapters Fourier's mode of coping with this problem. There are a number of reasons why a consideration of this may be regarded as worthwhile and of interest. It is, to begin with, ingenious and skillful. Aside from that it is a notable exemplar of work in the spirit of mathematics in the eighteenth century. Although this theory of Fourier's was actually created in the next century, and was crowned by the prize of the Academy of Paris in 1811, its disregard for rigor was even then outmoded and seemed, in fact, to run counter to the better standards of which Fourier himself was conscious. It is a formalism—no more—a play upon symbols in accordance with accepted rules but without much or any regard for content or significance. As such it has, of course, no place in the mathematics of our time. Fourier's work has had the profoundest effect both upon the development of pure mathematical concepts and upon the extension of the range of mathematical applications to the sciences and technology. These deserts, however, sprung in the main from Fourier's interpretations and not from his manipulations. It was, no doubt, partially because of his very disregard for rigor that he was able to take conceptual steps which were inherently impossible to men of more critical genius.

CHAPTER 10

Fourier's formal solution of his problem. [11] In the study of a representation (9.11) it comes to a mere matter of the choice of a unit of measurement to identify the length l with the value π. We shall suppose this to have been done since an appreciable formal simplification results from it. To summarize the problem at issue, then, it is that of determining from any given function $f(x)$ a set of constants b_ν such that

$$\sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} b_\nu \sin \nu x = f(x), \tag{10.1}$$

for $0<x<\pi$.

Fourier began his considerations of this relation by substituting in it for each sine function its power series equivalent, namely

$$\sin \nu x = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{n-1}\nu^{2n-1}}{(2n-1)!} x^{2n-1}.$$

Upon interchanging the order of the summations, an operation which was at that time generally resorted to without question, the relation (10.1) was made to appear in the form

$$f(x) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{n-1}}{(2n-1)!}\left(\sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} \nu^{2n-1} b_\nu\right) x^{2n-1}.$$

The function $f(x)$ has thus been related to a series in powers of x, and since such a series must, in fact, be its MacLaurin series

$$f(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{k!} f^{[k]}(0) x^k, \tag{10.2}$$

in which $f^{[k]}(x)$ stands for the kth derivation of $f(x)$, it was to be concluded by a comparison of the coefficients of like powers of x that $f^{[k]}(0)$ is zero whenever k is even, and that otherwise

$$\sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} \nu^{2n-1} b_\nu = (-1)^{n-1} f^{[2n-1]}(0), \qquad n = 1, 2, 3, \cdots. \tag{10.3}$$

The effect of this consideration has thus been to throw the constants b_ν into the rôle of the infinitely many unknowns in a system of infinitely many linear equations.

To deal with a system of this type Fourier had to invent his own method. He chose to base this upon the use of a chain of ordinary algebraic systems

$$\sum_{\nu=1}^{r} \nu^{2n-1} \beta_\nu(r) = \phi_n(r), \qquad n = 1, 2, \cdots, r, \tag{10.4}$$

of arbitrarily large degree r, the relevancy of these to the infinite system (10.3) to be assured by an adoption of the relations

$$\phi_n(\infty) = (-1)^{n-1} f^{[2n-1]}(0), \qquad n = 1, 2, 3, \cdots . \tag{10.5}$$

Inasmuch as the solution $\beta_\nu(r), \nu = 1, 2, \cdots, r$, of the system (10.4) is unique, whatever the degree r may be, it was tacitly assumed that the solution of the infinite system could be inferred from those of the finite ones in the manner

$$\beta_\nu(\infty) = b_\nu, \qquad \nu = 1, 2, 3, \cdots . \tag{10.6}$$

In the system (10.4) let the nth equation be multiplied by r^2 and let the next following equation then be subtracted from it. If this is done for each value of n from 1 to $(r-1)$ the result is the system of equations

$$\sum_{\nu=1}^{r-1} \nu^{2n-1} \left\{ [r^2 - \nu^2]\beta_\nu(r) \right\} = r^2\phi_n(r) - \phi_{n+1}(r), \quad n = 1, 2, \cdots, (r-1). \tag{10.7}$$

This suggests imposing upon the members $\phi_n(r)$ the relations

$$r^2\phi_n(r) - \phi_{n+1}(r) = \phi_n(r-1), \qquad n = 1, 2, \cdots, (r-1), \tag{10.8}$$

for, since the coefficients of the system (10.7) will then be precisely those of the system given by the equations (10.4) when r is replaced by $(r-1)$, it may be inferred that the unknowns $(r^2-\nu^2)\beta_\nu(r)$ in the one case and $\beta_\nu(r-1)$ in the other case, are, in fact, the same, namely that

$$\beta_\nu(r) = \frac{\beta_\nu(r-1)}{r^2 - \nu^2} .$$

By suitable iterations of this relation it is evidently found that

$$\beta_\nu(r) = \frac{\beta_\nu(\nu)}{\prod_{n=\nu+1}^{r} (n^2 - \nu^2)}, \qquad r > \nu, \tag{10.9}$$

whence it follows by a simple formal step from the finite r to the infinite, that

$$b_\nu = \frac{\beta_\nu(\nu)}{\prod_{n=\nu+1}^{\infty} (n^2 - \nu^2)} . \tag{10.10}$$

To any modern investigator this conclusion could, of course, be only meaningless, for the infinite product involved in it is manifestly divergent. Nor is the source of this unfortunate result difficult to trace. It lies, namely, in the naive adoption of the relations (10.8) in the face of the fact that these are quite inconsistent with the previously adopted assignments (10.5). It requires no keen critical faculty to observe at once that under the formula (10.9) the sequence of values $\beta_\nu(r)$ inevitably converges to zero with $1/r$ and hence that no conclu-

sion other than that of the vanishing of each coefficient b_r would be logically admissible. Fourier had no intention whatsoever of drawing that conclusion, and hence proceeded undismayed with the analysis of his formula. In so doing he found, quite naturally, that the divergence it already involved could be formally compensated for only by the introduction of still other divergencies.

Let the determinant $D(x)$ be defined by the formula

$$D(x) = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 2 & \cdots & (\nu-1) & x \\ 1^3 & 2^3 & \cdots & (\nu-1)^3 & x^3 \\ 1^5 & 2^5 & \cdots & (\nu-1)^5 & x^5 \\ \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots \\ 1^{2\nu-1} & 2^{2\nu-1} & \cdots & (\nu-1)^{2\nu-1} & x^{2\nu-1} \end{vmatrix}, \tag{10.11}$$

and let the cofactor of its element in the ith row and jth column be denoted by $D_{i,j}$. Then since the determinant of the system (10.4) when $r=\nu$ is precisely $D(\nu)$, it is seen at once that by Cramer's rule

$$\beta_\nu(\nu) = \frac{\sum_{n=1}^{\nu} D_{n,\nu}\phi_n(\nu)}{D(\nu)}. \tag{10.12}$$

This formula can be made much more explicit. The determinant $D(x)$ is, in the first place, found to admit (*cf.* appendix V) of the evaluation

$$D(x) = (-1)^{\nu-1} D_{\nu,\nu} x \prod_{n=1}^{\nu-1} (n^2 - x^2). \tag{10.13}$$

Upon expanding the left-hand member of this equality by the elements of its last column, and by agreeing to define the coefficients $c_n(r)$ for any value of r not less than ν by the relations

$$\prod_{n=1, n\neq\nu}^{r} (n^2 - x^2) = \sum_{n=1}^{r} c_n(r) x^{2n-2}, \tag{10.14}$$

it evidently follows further that

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\nu} D_{n,\nu} x^{2n-1} = (-1)^{\nu-1} D_{\nu,\nu} \sum_{n=1}^{\nu} c_n(\nu) x^{2n-1}.$$

Now in any identical equation between polynomials or power series, the coefficients of like powers of x in the two members of the equation must be the same. It will be seen at once that because of this the substitution of any quantity whatsoever in the place of any specific power of x will not destroy the equality. In the equation above, therefore, the replacement of x^{2n-1} for each value of n by the respective quantity $\phi_n(\nu)$ is legitimate. It leads to the result

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\nu} D_{n,\nu}\phi_n(\nu) = (-1)^{\nu-1}D_{\nu,\nu}\sum_{n=1}^{\nu} c_n(\nu)\phi_n(\nu),$$

and this, together with the value of $D(\nu)$ that is obtained from the relation (10.13), yields upon substitution into the equation (10.12) the formula

$$\beta_\nu(\nu) = \frac{\sum_{n=1}^{\nu} c_n(\nu)\phi_n(\nu)}{\nu\prod_{n=1}^{\nu-1}(n^2-\nu^2)}. \tag{10.15}$$

Let it be observed now that the removal of the factor (r^2-x^2) from the left-hand member of the equation (10.14) has the mere effect of reducing the index r to $(r-1)$. From that relation it is thus seen that

$$\sum_{n=1}^{r} c_n(r)x^{2n-2} = (r^2-x^2)\sum_{n=1}^{r-1} c_n(r-1)x^{2n-2},$$

namely that

$$\sum_{n=1}^{r} c_n(r)x^{2n-2} = \sum_{n=1}^{r-1} c_n(r-1)\left[r^2x^{2n-2} - x^{2n}\right].$$

If in this each power x^{2i} is replaced by the respective value $\phi_{i+1}(r)$, it follows because of the relation (10.8) that

$$\sum_{n=1}^{r} c_n(r)\phi_n(r) = \sum_{n=1}^{r-1} c_n(r-1)\phi_n(r-1).$$

The sum on the left of this equality is thus independent of r, and this having been established it is a simple formal step to write

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\nu} c_n(\nu)\phi_n(\nu) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} c_n(\infty)\phi_n(\infty). \tag{10.16}$$

It was familiar in Fourier's time (*c.f.* appendix VI) that

$$\prod_{n=1}^{\infty}\left(1-\frac{x^2}{n^2}\right) = \frac{\sin \pi x}{\pi x},$$

a relation which in a formal sense, if in no other, yields the formula

$$\prod_{n=1,n\neq\nu}^{\infty}(n^2-x^2) = \left(\prod_{n=1,n\neq\nu}^{\infty} n^2\right)\left(1-\frac{x^2}{\nu^2}\right)^{-1}\frac{\sin \pi x}{\pi x}.$$

Upon replacing the left-hand member of this by the equivalent series (10.14) and substituting on the right the series equivalents

$$\left(1-\frac{x^2}{\nu^2}\right)^{-1}=\sum_{q=0}^{\infty}\frac{x^{2q}}{\nu^{2q}},$$

$$\frac{\sin \pi x}{\pi x}=\sum_{k=1}^{\infty}\frac{(-1)^{k-1}\pi^{2k-2}}{(2k-1)!}x^{2k-2},$$

it becomes

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty}c_n(\infty)x^{2n-2}=\left(\prod_{n=1,n\neq\nu}^{\infty}n^2\right)\sum_{q=0}^{\infty}\sum_{k=1}^{\infty}\frac{(-1)^{k-1}\pi^{2k-2}}{\nu^{2q}(2k-1)!}x^{2q+2k-2}.$$

The procedure of replacing each power x^{2i-2} by $\phi_i(\infty)$ leads from this to the equation

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty}c_n(\infty)\phi_n(\infty)=\left(\prod_{n=1,n\neq\nu}^{\infty}n^2\right)\sum_{q=0}^{\infty}\sum_{k=1}^{\infty}\frac{(-1)^{k-1}\pi^{2k-2}}{\nu^{2q}(2k-1)!}\phi_{q+k}(\infty),$$

or, by virtue of the relations (10.5) and (10.16), to the relation

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\nu}c_n(\nu)\phi_n(\nu)=\left(\prod_{n=1,n\neq\nu}^{\infty}n^2\right)\sum_{q=0}^{\infty}\sum_{k=1}^{\infty}\frac{(-1)^{q}\pi^{2k-2}}{\nu^{2q}(2k-1)!}f^{[2q+2k-1]}(0).$$

With this result the formula (10.15) for $\beta_\nu(\nu)$ becomes wholly explicit, and through it the formula (10.10) assumes the form

$$b_\nu=\frac{\prod_{n=1,n\neq\nu}^{\infty}n^2}{\nu\prod_{n=1,n\neq\nu}^{\infty}(n^2-\nu^2)}\sum_{q=0}^{\infty}\frac{(-1)^q}{\nu^{2q}}\sum_{k=1}^{\infty}\frac{f^{[2q+2k-1]}(0)}{(2k-1)!}\pi^{2k-2}. \tag{10.17}$$

Inasmuch as all quantities in the right-hand member of this are to be regarded as known when $f(x)$ is known, this result amounts, at least in a formal sense, to an evaluation of the constant b_ν.

CHAPTER 11

The reduction and interpretation of the solution. [12] The result (10.17), although it formally accomplishes the task originally set, namely the construction of a formula through which the coefficients b_ν are expressed in terms of the given function $f(x)$, will nevertheless hardly be found completely satisfying. For the purposes of practical calculation, namely, some reduction of its intricacy would clearly be imperative, and Fourier, realizing this, turned his attention to its simplification. His effectiveness in achieving this is eloquent commentary upon his skill in analytical manipulations.

Consider, to begin with, the product of the values $(n^2-\nu^2)$ which the formula contains. The first $(\nu-1)$ factors of this are negative and have as their product

$$(-1)^{\nu-1}\prod_{n=1}^{\nu-1}(\nu-n)\prod_{n=1}^{\nu-1}(\nu+n).$$

The product of the remaining (positive) factors may be written in the form

$$\prod_{n=\nu+1}^{\infty}(n-\nu)\prod_{n=\nu+1}^{\infty}(n+\nu),$$

and thus, by simple changes of the index in each of the partial products, the entire expression may be made to appear as

$$(-1)^{\nu-1}\prod_{n=1}^{\nu-1}n\prod_{n=\nu+1}^{2\nu-1}n\prod_{n=1}^{\infty}n\prod_{n=2\nu+1}^{\infty}n.$$

Since in this each natural integer except ν and 2ν occurs twice, the excepted ones occurring just once, an alternative form for the product is evidently

$$\frac{(-1)^{\nu-1}}{2\nu^2}\prod_{n=1}^{\infty}n^2.$$

It has been found thus that formally

$$\prod_{n=1,n\neq\nu}^{\infty}(n^2-\nu^2)=\frac{(-1)^{\nu-1}}{2}\prod_{n=1,n\neq\nu}^{\infty}n^2. \tag{11.1}$$

Consider now the formula

$$f(x)=\sum_{n=1}^{\infty}\frac{f^{[2n-1]}(0)}{(2n-1)!}x^{2n-1}, \tag{11.2}$$

which is the equivalent of the relation (10.2) by virtue of the fact that in the latter each coefficient $f^{[k]}(0)$ with an even index k is zero. A $2q$-fold term by term differentiation leads from this to the companion formula

$$f^{[2q]}(x)=\sum_{n=q+1}^{\infty}\frac{f^{[2n-1]}(0)}{(2n-2q-1)!}x^{2n-2q-1},$$

and if in this x is given the value π and the index of summation is suitably changed, the result is the equation

$$\sum_{k=1}^{\infty}\frac{f^{[2k-2q-1]}(0)}{(2k-1)!}\pi^{2k-1}=f^{[2q]}(\pi). \tag{11.3}$$

The substitution of the evaluations (11.1) and (11.3) into the formula (10.17) causes a reduction of this latter to the form

$$b_\nu=\frac{2}{\nu}(-1)^{\nu-1}\sum_{q=0}^{\infty}\frac{(-1)^q f^{[2q]}(\pi)}{\nu^{2q}\pi}. \tag{11.4}$$

The infinite series which still appears in this result suggests the formal definition of a function $u(x)$ by the relation

$$u(x) = \sum_{q=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^q f^{[2q]}(x)}{\nu^{2q+1}}.$$

Upon differentiating this twice term by term and thereupon adjusting the index of summation, it is found that

$$u''(x) = -\nu^2 \sum_{q=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^q f^{[2q]}(x)}{\nu^{2q+1}},$$

and hence that

$$u''(x) + \nu^2 u(x) = \nu f(x).$$

This is a differential equation of an elementary type. Its reduced equation is solved by the function $(c_1 \sin \nu x + c_2 \cos \nu x)$ and from this fact the method of "variation of parameters" [13] leads readily to the conclusion that the equation itself has a solution

$$U(x) = \int_0^x f(s) \sin \nu(x - s) ds.$$

This is, of course, verifiable at once by direct substitution into the differential equation. Upon setting $x = \pi$ it is thus found that

$$U(\pi) = (-1)^{\nu-1} \int_0^{\pi} f(s) \sin \nu s ds. \tag{11.5}$$

Let the integral in this formula now be integrated by parts $2n$ times in succession, the trigonometric factor being each time the one to be integrated. Since, as may be seen from the formula (11.2), every even ordered derivative of $f(s)$ is zero at $s = 0$, while the function $\sin \nu s$ vanishes at both $s = 0$ and $s = \pi$, the result of these integrations is the relation

$$U(\pi) = \sum_{q=0}^{n} \frac{(-1)^q f^{[2q]}(\pi)}{\nu^{2q+1}} + \frac{(-1)^{n+\nu}}{\nu^{2q+2}} \int_0^{\pi} f^{[2n+2]}(s) \sin \nu s ds.$$

By the step from the finite n to the infinite the formal relation

$$U(\pi) = \sum_{q=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^q f^{[2q]}(\pi)}{\nu^{2q+1}},$$

may be drawn therefrom, and this together with the formula (11.5) yields the equality

$$\frac{1}{\nu} \sum_{q=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^q f^{[2q]}(\pi)}{\nu^{2q}} = (-1)^{\nu-1} \int_0^{\pi} f(s) \sin \nu s ds.$$

By virtue of this the formula (11.4) is now once more and finally reduced to the form

$$b_\nu = \frac{2}{\pi}\int_0^\pi f(s)\sin \nu s\,ds. \tag{11.6}$$

This is, of course, the familiar formula in virtue of which the coefficients b_ν are generally known as those of Fourier. It is the formula (1.4) for the special case in which $l=\pi$.

Elegant though the conclusion (11.6) unquestionably is, the verdict of any critical appraisal of Fourier's accomplishment to the point of its derivation must inevitably be profoundly disappointing. As to the result, in the first place, that was not new. It had been contained in the mathematical literature for over a decade—to be precise, since the publication of the memoir of Euler that was discussed in chapter 8. While, to be sure, Euler's results applied only to functions of a certain class, that is no less true of Fourier's, since his deductions were based upon such material restrictions as the representability of the function $f(x)$ in power series of the form (11.2) that converge when $x=\pi$.

Nor could any advantage be claimed by Fourier in the matter of method. On the contrary—and even leaving aside the important fact that by its employment of divergent processes it divested itself of all rigorous validity—the method of Fourier suffers in almost every respect by comparison with that of Euler. The device of referring the problem to a system of linear equations, ingenious though it is, is nevertheless quite foreign to the nature of the problem. The trigonometric functions are conspicuously endowed with many peculiar properties and fulfill a great many characteristic interrelationships. Of this important fact Fourier's approach in no way avails itself, while Euler's, by contrast, exploits it to the utmost. In cutting directly to the heart of the matter Euler thus attained his result more perspicuously and incomparably more cheaply. In this respect the superiority is all his.

With the priority and preference in manipulative matters thus denied him, Fourier's claim to renown must be based upon other grounds, and these are, namely, those of interpretation. Approaching the formula (11.6) afresh, without regard for the manner of its derivation, it was observed by him that through it each coefficient b_ν admits of interpretation as the area between the abscissas $x=0$ and $x=\pi$, and under the graph

$$y = \frac{2}{\pi} f(x)\sin \nu x. \tag{11.7}$$

Such an area is evidently conceivable, and retains its clear-cut significance, in association with functions $f(x)$ that are in a very general sense quite arbitrary. Certainly these functions need not be assumed to be continuous or expansible by any simple analytical formulas. They might be graphically defined and

might well represent distributions of functional values that are extremely erratic. On the basis of such considerations Fourier concluded that *any* and *every* function $f(x)$ had associated with it a set of constants b_ν.

From this fact alone it would not follow, of course, that with such coefficients the representation of the function $f(x)$ by a series (10.1) would result. As has been seen in chapters 1 and 5, the masters of the eighteenth century had rejected such a possibility as manifestly absurd. In this matter, however, Fourier was willing to disregard opinions and precedents, however well established, and to look further for himself. From calculations of the coefficients b_ν with small indices ν in the cases of a great variety of functions $f(x)$, and from subsequent plottings of the respective initial segments of the resulting trigonometric series, he came to convictions upon two salient points, namely: (i) that the series (10.1) *always* represents the function over the interval $0<x<\pi$, and (ii) that in general this representation does not persist for values of x outside that interval.

Fourier's announcement of these facts was quite generally met with incredulity. Even the mass of his substantiating evidence won, in many cases, only grudging and reluctant acceptance. The implications behind the new assertions were too revolutionary to be easily assimilated. They called for no less than a fundamental revision of many concepts that were wholly traditional, some of them lying at the very basis of mathematical analysis. On the other hand Fourier's new theory did now finally vindicate the half century old reasoning of Daniel Bernoulli by which he had convinced himself, if no others, that any curve from which a taut elastic string could spring into vibration could be represented by a trigonometric series.

CHAPTER 12

The Dirichlet integrals. Once Fourier had deduced the formula (11.6), he, like Euler before him, observed that in a schematic way the result is recoverable in a most direct and simple manner by the mere expedient of multiplying the relation (10.1) through by $\sin \mu x$ with any natural integer μ, and then integrating term by term over the interval $(0, \pi)$. The infinite series reduces under this process to a single term, because of the evaluations

$$\int_0^\pi \sin \nu x \sin \mu x dx = 0, \qquad \text{for } \nu \neq \mu, \tag{12.1}$$

and the formula for b_μ thus emerges. The procedure is obviously adaptable also to the case of a cosine representation

$$f(x) = \frac{a_0}{2} + \sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} a_\nu \cos \nu x, \tag{12.2}$$

the evaluations

$$\int_0^\pi \cos \nu x \cos \mu x dx = 0, \qquad \text{for } \nu \neq \mu, \tag{12.3}$$

leading in this case to the formulas

$$a_\nu = \frac{2}{\pi} \int_0^\pi f(s) \cos \nu s ds, \qquad \nu = 1, 2, 3, \cdots. \tag{12.4}$$

An extension of these results to the case of a function that is given over the larger interval $(-\pi, \pi)$ is of importance and is easily deduced. Through the relation

$$f(x) = f_0(x) + f_e(x),$$

with

$$f_0(x) \equiv \tfrac{1}{2}[f(x) - f(-x)],$$
$$f_e(x) \equiv \tfrac{1}{2}[f(x) + f(-x)],$$

the function $f(x)$ is expressed as the sum of two components of which the first one is an odd function and the second one even. Now the relations (10.1) and (12.2) for these respective functions, namely

$$f_0(x) = \sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} b_\nu \sin \nu x,$$

$$f_e(x) = \frac{a_0}{2} + \sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} a_\nu \cos \nu x,$$

obviously remain quite unchanged if x is replaced by $-x$. Any validity they may have over the interval $(0, \pi)$ therefore implies the same over the larger interval $(-\pi, \pi)$. It follows at once that for the originally given function the representation in question is of the form

$$f(x) = \frac{a_0}{2} + \sum_{\nu=1}^{\infty} [a_\nu \cos \nu x + b_\nu \sin \nu x]. \tag{12.5}$$

The formulas for the coefficients in this are, moreover, easily freed from reference to the components $f_0(x)$ and $f_e(x)$, and may thus be brought to expression directly in terms of the function $f(x)$ itself. Since

$$\int_0^\pi f_0(s) \sin \nu s ds = \frac{1}{2} \int_{-\pi}^\pi f(s) \sin \nu s ds,$$

as may easily be verified, and also

$$\int_0^\pi f_e(s) \cos \nu s ds = \frac{1}{2} \int_{-\pi}^\pi f(s) \cos \nu s ds,$$

the formulas in question are, namely, seen to be

$$(12.6)\qquad a_\nu = \frac{1}{\pi}\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} f(s)\cos \nu s ds,$$
$$b_\nu = \frac{1}{\pi}\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} f(s)\sin \nu s ds.$$

In the instance that the interval $(-\pi, \pi)$ which has been taken to be basic is replaced by the more general interval $(-l, l)$, the representation (12.5), (12.6), is correspondingly replaced by that given in the formulas (1.1), (1.2).

Let the sum of the first $2N+1$ terms of the series (12.5) be designated by $S_N(x)$, thus

$$(12.7)\qquad S_N(x) = \frac{a_0}{2} + \sum_{\nu=1}^{N}[a_\nu \cos \nu x + b_\nu \sin \nu x].$$

The substitution of the values of the coefficients (12.6) into this gives it the aspect

$$S_N(x) = \frac{1}{\pi}\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} f(s)\left[\frac{1}{2} + \sum_{\nu=1}^{N}\cos \nu(s-x)ds\right],$$

and this may be contracted by the use of elementary trigonometric relations (*cf.* appendix VII) into the wholly compact form

$$(12.8)\qquad S_N(x) = \frac{1}{2\pi}\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} f(s)\frac{\sin\left[(N+\frac{1}{2})(s-x)\right]}{\sin\left[\frac{1}{2}(s-x)\right]}ds.$$

An equivalent manner of writing this, and one that has some analytic advantages, is

$$(12.9)\qquad S_N(x) = \frac{1}{\pi}\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} f(s)\frac{\sin\left[(N+\frac{1}{2})(s-x)\right]}{(s-x)}ds + \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} F(s)\Psi(s, x, N)ds,$$

with the symbols $F(s)$ and $\Psi(s, x, N)$ having the significance

$$F(s) \equiv \frac{f(s)}{2\pi}\left\{\frac{1}{\sin\left[\frac{1}{2}(s-x)\right]} - \frac{1}{\frac{1}{2}(s-x)}\right\},$$
$$\Psi(s, x, N) \equiv \sin\left[(N+\tfrac{1}{2})(s-x)\right].$$

From the latter of these formulas it is easily inferred that

$$|\Psi(s, x, N)| \leqq 1, \quad \text{and}$$
$$\left|\int_{\alpha}^{\beta}\Psi(s, x, N)ds\right| \leqq \frac{4}{2N+1}, \quad \text{for } -\pi \leqq \alpha < \beta \leqq \pi.$$

The function $\Psi(s, x, N)$ thus possesses the properties:

(i) that it is bounded uniformly as to N and s;

(ii) that its integral over any sub-interval of the range $(-\pi, \pi)$ converges to zero with $1/N$ uniformly as to the sub-interval.

These properties are sufficient to insure [14] the relation

$$\lim_{N\to\infty} \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} F(s)\Psi(s, x, N)ds = 0, \tag{12.10}$$

whenever the function $F(s)$ is integrable (in the sense of Lebesgue) over the interval $(-\pi, \pi)$.

Now from the definition of the function $F(s)$ it may readily be seen that integrability is assured to it by that of the function $f(s)$ provided the point x is in the interior of the interval $(-\pi, \pi)$. Thus for every integrable function $f(x)$ the final integral in the relation (12.9) converges to zero, and that relation thus implies that

$$\lim_{N\to\infty} S_N(x) = \lim_{N\to\infty} \frac{1}{\pi} \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} f(s) \frac{\sin\left[(N + \frac{1}{2})(s - x)\right]}{(s - x)} ds, \tag{12.11}$$

whenever the right-hand limit involved in this exists. This permits us at once the conclusion: that any function $f(x)$ which is integrable and which is furthermore such that for it

$$\lim_{N\to\infty} \frac{1}{\pi} \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} f(s) \frac{\sin\left[(N + \frac{1}{2})(s - x)\right]}{(s - x)} ds = f(x), \tag{12.12}$$

is a function which is representable by a trigonometric series in the manner (12.5), (12.6).

Although Fourier made calculations upon many specific cases, he gave no general proof of his ultimate assertion of the trigonometric representability of *arbitrary* functions. Indeed no such proof could have been given, since in the omission of all qualifications upon the functions the assertion is too broad to be valid. The first proof that was both satisfactory in the matter of rigor and ample in the matter of generality was given by Dirichlet in the year 1829. In the manner that has been indicated above, this proof was based by Dirichlet upon an establishment of the relation (12.12). The integrals involved in that relation and in (12.8) are accordingly known generally as "Dirichlet integrals." Dirichlet's proof in its original form, or as it has been improved and refined, is to be found at many places in the mathematical literature [15]. We shall, therefore, go no further into it here but shall draw this part of the discussion to its close. In the following part the primary subject of study is to be a generalization of the entire theory in which the representations of functions in trigonometric terms sink to the status of special cases.

PART II

CHAPTER 13

The differential boundary problem. Among the most powerful of mathematical means for the formulation of natural laws are the linear differential equations of either the partial or the ordinary type. Varied and diverse as physical phenomena certainly are, they nevertheless submit quite generally to description by such equations. The flow of heat in material bodies and the vibrations of elastic strings under tension are instances of this that have already been noted.

By its very nature as the formulation of a more or less general law, any particular differential equation applies, of course, to the entire category of manifestations which the law itself governs. To single out for description any individual phenomenon from such a category, therefore requires that some auxiliary means beyond the equation itself be resorted to. This ordinarily takes on the form of a set of one or more restricting relations that are expressive of the characterizing initial or boundary conditions. The differential equation together with such relations is commonly designated as a *differential system.* It is also said to define a *differential boundary problem.* The system consisting of the equations (4.6) and (4.7), for instance, thus defines a partial differential boundary problem, namely the one which is descriptive of a certain stretched string vibrating with specified end points and initial position of release. The equations (9.2), (9.3) and (9.4), define a similar problem, one which describes a linear flow of heat from specific initial temperatures and under certain boundary conditions.

The method that was employed in the reduction of the boundary problem of chapter 9 was designated there as that of the "separation of variables." Its immediate effect was to refer the partial differential system to an *ordinary* system (9.6), this latter having the peculiarity of involving an unspecified constant or parameter, which was designated by λ. Following the solution of this ordinary boundary problem at characteristic values of this parameter, the theory led in a natural way to the further problem of representing an arbitrary function in terms of the respective solutions. This method was in no way especially designed for the problem of chapter 9. It is on the contrary one that is highly flexible and of very wide applicability. In the particular instance there considered the ordinary differential equation which characterized the problem was one whose solutions were trigonometric functions, and it was because of that, that the representation of the function $f(x)$ took the form (9.11), namely that of the Fourier theory. This feature was special, to the extent that it would not even have maintained for the equation (9.2) if the coefficient κ^2 involved in it had been dependent upon the coördinate x, rather than constant. In the following a discussion is to be framed which is free from such peculiar specializations.

Let the variable x be real, with the range

$$a \leqq x \leqq b, \tag{13.1}$$

and on this interval let $p(x)$, $q(x)$, and $r(x)$, be differentiable functions. The symbol $L(\phi, \lambda)$ is to designate the differential expression

$$L(\phi, \lambda) \equiv \phi'' + p(x)\phi' + [q(x)\lambda + r(x)]\phi. \tag{13.2}$$

In this λ is to play the rôle of a parameter, the range of which is to be the entire complex plane. The differential equation

$$L(\phi, \lambda) = 0, \tag{13.3}$$

is, then, one that is regular, in the sense that it has no singular points upon the interval (13.1). As an equation of the second order it will, of course, not generally be explicitly solvable. Certain facts concerning its solutions are, however, familiar. Of these the following ones will be especially relevant to the discussion proposed [16].

(i) The equation admits of solutions $\phi(x, \lambda)$ that have continuous second derivatives as to x, and that are analytic in λ over the entire complex λ plane.

(ii) There is a pair of such solutions $\phi_1(x, \lambda)$, $\phi_2(x, \lambda)$, that are linearly independent as functions of x for all values of λ.

(iii) The Wronskian $\Omega(x, \lambda)$ of this pair, namely the determinant

$$\Omega(x, \lambda) \equiv \begin{vmatrix} \phi_1(x, \lambda) & \phi_2(x, \lambda) \\ \phi_1'(x, \lambda) & \phi_2'(x, \lambda) \end{vmatrix}, \tag{13.4}$$

is subject to the relation

$$\Omega(x, \lambda) = \Omega(a, \lambda) e^{-\int_a^x p(x)\,dx}, \tag{13.5}$$

with $\Omega(a, \lambda)$ an analytic function of λ that is different from zero for all λ.

(iv) The general solution of the equation (13.3) is expressible in terms of the pair $\phi_1(x, \lambda)$, $\phi_2(x, \lambda)$ by a form

$$h_2\phi_1(x, \lambda) + h_1\phi_2(x, \lambda), \tag{13.6}$$

in which the coefficients h_1, h_2 are constants as to x, though they may be functions of λ.

For any equation (13.3) there are known to be infinitely many pairs of solutions $\phi_1(x, \lambda)$, $\phi_2(x, \lambda)$, that have the properties enumerated. Of these pairs any one serves in every way as well as any other, and the choice that is made is accordingly immaterial. For the sake of avoiding gratuitous complications, however, it will be supposed throughout the discussion that when a choice of such a pair in the instance of any specific equation has been made, it will be consistently adhered to. To that extent, then, the designations $\phi_1(x, \lambda)$, $\phi_2(x, \lambda)$ will be understood to apply not to random but to specific solutions.

Let the symbols $\beta_{i,j}, \gamma_{i,j}, i = 1, 2; j = 1, 2, 3, 4$; now denote any constants which are such that when

$$\alpha_{i,j}(\lambda) = \beta_{i,j}\lambda + \gamma_{i,j}, \tag{13.7}$$

then the matrix

$$\left\| \begin{matrix} \alpha_{1,1}(\lambda) & \alpha_{1,2}(\lambda) & \alpha_{1,3}(\lambda) & \alpha_{1,4}(\lambda) \\ \alpha_{2,1}(\lambda) & \alpha_{2,2}(\lambda) & \alpha_{2,3}(\lambda) & \alpha_{2,4}(\lambda) \end{matrix} \right\| \tag{13.8}$$

is of the rank 2 for every value of λ. In terms of the values of any function θ and its derivative θ' at $x=a$ and $x=b$, the forms

$$A_i(\theta, \lambda) \equiv \alpha_{i,1}(\lambda)\theta'(a) + \alpha_{i,2}(\lambda)\theta(a) + \alpha_{i,3}(\lambda)\theta'(b) + \alpha_{i,4}(\lambda)\theta(b), \quad i = 1,2, \tag{13.9}$$

are then always linearly independent. Under these circumstances the differential system

$$\begin{aligned} L(u, \lambda) &= 0, \\ A_1(u, \lambda) &= 0, \\ A_2(u, \lambda) &= 0, \end{aligned} \tag{13.10}$$

defines an ordinary boundary problem. It is this problem which is to be central to our discussion. It will be seen at once to include as a special case the problem (9.6), and to do that even if in the latter the coefficient κ^2 varies with x. Many other boundary problems that stem from physical origins are also included, as will upon occasion be seen in the following.

CHAPTER 14

The characteristic values and solutions. Since any solution $u(x)$ of the differential system (13.10) must in particular solve the differential equation (13.3), it must have the form

$$u(x) = h_2\phi_1(x, \lambda) + h_1\phi_2(x, \lambda). \tag{14.1}$$

Except for the trivial solution $u(x) \equiv 0$, which we shall herewith specifically and permanently rule out of this discussion, the values h_1, h_2 will not both be zero. The substitution of this form into the boundary relations of the system give to the latter the aspect

$$\begin{aligned} h_2A_{1,1}(\lambda) + h_1A_{1,2}(\lambda) &= 0, \\ h_2A_{2,1}(\lambda) + h_1A_{2,2}(\lambda) &= 0, \end{aligned} \tag{14.2}$$

in which the abbreviations

$$A_{i,j}(\lambda) \equiv A_i(\phi_j(x, \lambda), \lambda), \qquad i, j = 1, 2, \tag{14.3}$$

have been resorted to.

The equations (14.2) constitute an algebraic system in which the values h_1, h_2, function as the unknowns. Since this system is homogeneous its non-trivial solvability is contingent upon the vanishing of its determinant $\Delta(\lambda)$, where

$$\Delta(\lambda) \equiv \begin{vmatrix} A_{1,1}(\lambda) & A_{1,2}(\lambda) \\ A_{2,1}(\lambda) & A_{2,2}(\lambda) \end{vmatrix}. \tag{14.4}$$

A proper solution of the boundary problem thus exists if and only if λ is a root of the so-called *characteristic equation*

$$\Delta(\lambda) = 0. \tag{14.5}$$

These roots are called the *characteristic values* (*Eigenwerte*) of the boundary problem. The multiplicity with which such a value occurs as a root of the equation (14.5) is also designated to be its *multiplicity* as a characteristic value. If the root is one at which the elements of the determinant (14.4) do not all vanish, namely at which the rank of the determinant is 1, it is said to be a characteristic value of the *index* 1. On the other hand a value at which the elements do all vanish is said to be of the index 2. It is not difficult to see that in this latter case its multiplicity must also be at least 2, and hence that in every case

$$\text{(The index)} \leqq \text{(The multiplicity)}. \tag{14.6}$$

There is material advantage to be gained by formally regarding a value whose index is 2 as being, in fact, two coincident characteristic values. We shall herewith, once for all, adopt this convention.

The determinant $\Delta(\lambda)$ is an analytic function for all values of λ. The number of its zeros in any finite region of the λ plane is, therefore, finite. Thus, in particular, only a finite number of these zeros fulfill a relation $|\lambda| < N$, whatever the constant N may be, a fact from which it follows that they—the characteristic values—may be sequentially ordered in a succession of non-decreasing absolute value. With the assignment of subscripts in such a succession, the characteristic values thus follow each other in the array

$$\lambda_0, \lambda_1, \lambda_2, \lambda_3, \cdots. \tag{14.7}$$

In this, then,

$$|\lambda_r| \leqq |\lambda_{r+1}|, \tag{14.8}$$

for every subscript r. Each characteristic value of the index 2 occurs in the array twice, occupying, as we may and shall assume, two consecutive positions. Each characteristic value of the index 1 occurs just once.

Consider now any characteristic value λ_r that is of the index 1. The pairs of values $(h_1, h_2) = (h_1^{(r)}, h_2^{(r)})$ which satisfy the system (14.2), namely for which

$$\begin{aligned} h_2^{(r)} A_{1,1}(\lambda_r) + h_1^{(r)} A_{1,2}(\lambda_r) &= 0, \\ h_2^{(r)} A_{2,1}(\lambda_r) + h_1^{(r)} A_{2,2}(\lambda_r) &= 0, \end{aligned} \tag{14.9}$$

have in this case members that stand in a fixed ratio to each other. Any such pair yields through the formula

$$u_r(x) = h_2^{(r)} \phi_1(x, \lambda_r) + h_1^{(r)} \phi_2(x, \lambda_r), \tag{14.10}$$

an associated solution for the boundary problem, and the solution so obtainable from any other pair is a mere multiple of this. The function $u_r(x)$ is known as a *characteristic solution* (*Eigenfunktion*) of the boundary problem.

If now, on the other hand, λ_r and λ_{r+1} are the designations of a characteristic value of the index 2, then at this value the system (14.9) is vacuous since each quantity $A_{i,j}(\lambda_r)$ is zero. There is, therefore, no restriction upon the choice of h_1, h_2, and hence in particular two pairs that are not multiples of each other may be taken. These lead through the formula (14.1) to two linearly independent characteristic solutions $u_r(x)$, $u_{r+1}(x)$, which we may regard as associated with the values λ_r and λ_{r+1} respectively. Thus in every instance each symbol λ_r has associated with it a function $u_r(x)$.

There exist boundary problems that have only a finite number of characteristic values or even none at all. There also exists, however, a large class of such problems for which the characteristic values are infinitely numerous. It is only to problems of this latter category that the continuing discussion will, in all its phases, be relevant.

CHAPTER 15

The adjoint boundary problem. With the coefficient functions $p(x)$, $q(x)$, and $r(x)$, that occur in the expression (13.2) let $M(\phi, \lambda)$ be defined by the formula

$$M(\phi, \lambda) \equiv \phi'' - (p\phi)' + [q(x)\lambda + r(x)]\phi. \tag{15.1}$$

This differential form is said to be *adjoint to* the form $L(\phi, \lambda)$. It is customary also to refer to it as *the adjoint of* $L(\phi, \lambda)$. If it is completely written out, thus

$$\phi'' - p(x)\phi' + [q(x)\lambda + r(x) - p'(x)]\phi,$$

and its adjoint is in turn constructed, this latter is found to be again the form $L(\phi, \lambda)$. The relationship of being adjoint is thus a reciprocal one, either of two forms so associated being the adjoint of the other. For the two adjoint forms the equality

$$\psi L(\phi, \lambda) - \phi M(\psi, \lambda) = \frac{d}{dx} Q(\phi, \psi, x), \tag{15.2}$$

with

$$Q(\phi, \psi, x) \equiv \phi'(x)\psi(x) - \phi(x)\psi'(x) + p(x)\phi(x)\psi(x), \tag{15.3}$$

is easily verified for any two suitably differentiable functions ϕ and ψ. The relation is thus an identity. It is generally known as the "Lagrange identity," and is the source of many important analytical formulas.

The notion of the adjoint relationship is extensible in the most direct and immediate way to differential equations such as the equation (13.3). This latter and the equation

$$M(\psi, \lambda) = 0, \tag{15.4}$$

are thus likewise said to be adjoint. As the discussion proceeds there will be ample illustration of the manner in which the differential equations of an adjoint pair, or their respective solutions, interplay in the development of a theory. Even here it may be observed that the solubility of either equation implies that of the other, since the solutions of either are simply expressible in terms of those of the other. Thus if the solutions $\phi_1(x, \lambda)$, $\phi_2(x, \lambda)$ of the equation (13.3) and their Wronskian (13.4) are used to construct the functions $\psi_1(x, \lambda)$, $\psi_2(x, \lambda)$ by the formulas

$$\psi_1(x, \lambda) \equiv \frac{-\phi_2(x, \lambda)}{\Omega(x, \lambda)}, \qquad \psi_2(x, \lambda) \equiv \frac{\phi_1(x, \lambda)}{\Omega(x, \lambda)}, \tag{15.5}$$

these latter are found by direct substitution to satisfy the equation (15.4). They are similarly seen to fulfill the relations

$$Q(\phi_i, \psi_j, x) = \begin{cases} 1, & \text{if } j = i, \\ 0, & \text{if } j \neq i, \end{cases} \tag{15.6}$$

and to be linearly independent. In terms of them the general solution of the equation (15.4) is accordingly expressible in the form

$$v(x, \lambda) = k_2\psi_1(x, \lambda) + k_1\psi_2(x, \lambda), \tag{15.7}$$

with coefficients k_1, k_2 that are free from x. The relations (15.6) when applied to the form (15.7) yield at once the evaluations

$$\begin{aligned} Q(\phi_1, v, x) &= k_2, \\ Q(\phi_2, v, x) &= k_1. \end{aligned} \tag{15.8}$$

The extension of the notion of the adjoint relationship to the complete boundary problem (13.10), although it is not immediate is nevertheless possible, and may in fact be made in several formally different but essentially equivalent ways. We shall do this in the following manner. Consider the differential system

$$\begin{aligned} M(v, \lambda) &= 0, \\ v(a) &= \mu_2\alpha_{1,1}(\lambda) + \mu_1\alpha_{2,1}(\lambda), \\ -v'(a) + p(a)v(a) &= \mu_2\alpha_{1,2}(\lambda) + \mu_1\alpha_{2,2}(\lambda), \\ -v(b) &= \mu_2\alpha_{1,3}(\lambda) + \mu_1\alpha_{2,3}(\lambda), \\ v'(b) - p(b)v(b) &= \mu_2\alpha_{1,4}(\lambda) + \mu_1\alpha_{2,4}(\lambda), \end{aligned} \tag{15.9}$$

in which there occurs besides the function $v(x)$ also a pair of "parameters" μ_1, μ_2 that are independent of x. The coefficients $\alpha_{i,j}(\lambda)$ are to be those which were defined by the formulas (13.7). We shall show that this system in fact defines a boundary problem which is essentially of the type (13.10), and that the param-

eters μ_1, μ_2 may be looked upon as standing for certain specific linear forms in the values $v'(a)$, $v(a)$, $v'(b)$ and $v(b)$, with coefficients that are functions of λ.

The condition that the set of boundary relations of the system (15.9) be consistent in the "unknowns" μ_1, μ_2, is that the matrix

$$\left\| \begin{matrix} v(a) & \alpha_{1,1} & \alpha_{2,1} \\ -v'(a) + p(a)v(a) & \alpha_{1,2} & \alpha_{2,2} \\ -v(b) & \alpha_{1,3} & \alpha_{2,3} \\ v'(b) - p(b)v(b) & \alpha_{1,4} & \alpha_{2,4} \end{matrix} \right\|$$

be of the rank 2. Now by hypothesis there is, for every λ, some two rowed determinant from the last two columns of this matrix that is not zero. This occurs as a minor in two of the three rowed determinants of the matrix. The results of setting these latter equal to zero are two equations in the quantities $v'(a)$, $v(a)$, $v'(b)$, $v(b)$. That these equations are independent follows at once from the fact that each contains one of the four quantities which the other does not contain. Thus the differential equation of the system (15.9) is seen to have imposed upon it two linear boundary conditions. A boundary problem is thus defined. The boundary relations of this problem evidently have coefficients that are polynomials in λ. To this significant extent the problem is accordingly similar in form to the problem (13.10). It is true that the coefficients of the boundary relations of the system (13.10) were taken to be linear polynomials, whereas those of the newly found system may be quadratic. That, however, is not truly important, for the assumption of the coefficients of the problem (13.10) to be of the first degree in λ was motivated only by the desire for simplicity, and is in no way essential. Finally some pair of the equations (15.9) is always solvable for μ_1 and μ_2. By that solution μ_1 and μ_2 are expressed as linear forms in the values $v'(a)$, $v(a)$, $v'(b)$, $v(b)$ as was asserted above to be possible.

It is a matter to be observed that if in the equations (15.9) the parameters μ_1, μ_2 were to be both zero, it would follow that $v'(a)$ and $v(a)$ would also necessarily vanish. Only the trivial solution of the differential equation $M(v, \lambda)$ conforms to these values. Since this solution is to be ruled out of the discussion, it is evident that the simultaneous vanishing of μ_1 and μ_2 is likewise to be barred. It is to be understood henceforth, therefore, that of the value pair μ_1, μ_2 at least one member is in every case different from zero.

If in any differential system the differential equation is replaced by its general solution, and the boundary relations are replaced by independent linear combinations of them, the content of the system clearly remains unchanged. In consonance with this let the first two of the boundary relations of the set (15.9) be multiplied respectively by the factors $\phi_j'(a, \lambda)$ and $\phi_j(a, \lambda)$ with $j = 1, 2$, and let them then be added. The left-hand members thus obtained are found to be $Q(\phi_j, v, a)$, and thus by the relations (15.8) the resulting equalities are

$$k_{3-j} = \mu_2 A_{1,j}^{(a)}(\lambda) + \mu_1 A_{2,j}^{(a)}(\lambda), \qquad j = 1, 2, \tag{15.10}$$

with

$$A_{i,j}^{(a)}(\lambda) \equiv \alpha_{i,1}(\lambda)\phi_j'(a, \lambda) + \alpha_{i,2}(\lambda)\phi_j(a, \lambda), \qquad i, j = 1, 2. \tag{15.11}$$

In a similar way the last two of the relations (15.9) may be combined with the multipliers $-\phi_j'(b, \lambda)$ and $-\phi_j(b, \lambda)$ to assume the forms

$$k_{3-j} = \mu_2[A_{1,j}^{(a)}(\lambda) - A_{1,j}(\lambda)] + \mu_1[A_{2,j}^{(a)}(\lambda) - A_{2,j}(\lambda)], \qquad j = 1, 2. \tag{15.12}$$

In content the equations (15.7), (15.10) and (15.12) are thus equivalent to the set (15.9).

Consider now the case in which λ is any characteristic value of the boundary problem (15.9), namely a value for which a set of elements $v(x)$, μ_1, μ_2, fulfilling the equations (15.9) exists. From the fulfillment of the equations (15.10) and (15.12) it follows then at once that

$$\begin{aligned} \mu_2 A_{1,1}(\lambda) + \mu_1 A_{2,1}(\lambda) &= 0, \\ \mu_2 A_{1,2}(\lambda) + \mu_1 A_{2,2}(\lambda) &= 0. \end{aligned} \tag{15.13}$$

Since μ_1 and μ_2 are not both zero, the determinant of this system must vanish. This determinant is, however, precisely $\Delta(\lambda)$, as that was defined by the formula (14.4). Thus λ must be a root of the equation (14.5), namely a characteristic value of the boundary problem (13.10). Every characteristic value of the adjoint boundary problem is thus also a characteristic value of the given one.

The converse of this may also be established. Thus let λ_n be any value from the set (14.7). With λ at this value the system (15.13) is non-trivially satisfiable by values $\mu_1^{(n)}$, $\mu_2^{(n)}$, which, of course, fulfill the relations

$$\begin{aligned} \mu_2^{(n)} A_{1,1}(\lambda_n) + \mu_1^{(n)} A_{2,1}(\lambda_n) &= 0, \\ \mu_2^{(n)} A_{1,2}(\lambda_n) + \mu_1^{(n)} A_{2,2}(\lambda_n) &= 0. \end{aligned} \tag{15.14}$$

Let $v_n(x)$ be the solution of the first three equations of the set (15.9) with $\lambda = \lambda_n$ and $\mu_j = \mu_j^{(n)}$, $j = 1, 2$. The familiar "existence theorem" for a linear ordinary differential equation [17] gives assurance of both the existence and the uniqueness of this function. Now with the values at hand the equations (15.10) are fulfilled. Because of this, however, and with the equations (15.14), the relations (15.12) are seen to be also fulfilled. This means that the entire system (15.9) admits this solution, namely that λ_n is also a characteristic value of the boundary problem (15.9). We may go even somewhat further. If the index of λ_n relative to the boundary problem (13.10) is 1, the system (15.14) determines the values $\mu_1^{(n)}$, $\mu_2^{(n)}$, except for a common multiplicative factor which remains arbitrary. From the manner in which $v_n(x)$ is determined it is then seen that this function is also fixed except for a constant multiplier. If, on the other hand, λ_n is of the index 2 relative to the boundary problem (13.10), the system (15.14) admits of solution by two linearly independent pairs of values μ_1, μ_2. Each of these leads in the manner described to an associated solution $v(x)$, and the two of these so ob-

tained are also linearly independent. It has thus been shown that adjoint boundary problems have the same characteristic values, and, moreover, that each such value has the same index relative to each of the two problems.

For the characteristic solutions $v_n(x)$ of the boundary problem (15.9) the formula (15.7) yields the form

$$v_n(x) = k_2^{(n)}\psi_1(x, \lambda_n) + k_1^{(n)}\psi_2(x, \lambda_n). \tag{15.15}$$

The coefficients in this, as they may be drawn from the equations (15.10), have the evaluations

$$\begin{aligned} k_2^{(n)} &= \mu_2^{(n)} A_{1,1}^{(a)}(\lambda_n) + \mu_1^{(n)} A_{2,1}^{(a)}(\lambda_n), \\ k_1^{(n)} &= \mu_2^{(n)} A_{1,2}^{(a)}(\lambda_n) + \mu_1^{(n)} A_{2,2}^{(a)}(\lambda_n). \end{aligned} \tag{15.16}$$

In general the boundary problems (13.10) and (15.9) are distinct. In a restricted class of cases, however, they may be effectively the same. Boundary problems of this class are said to be *self-adjoint*. Many familiar physical phenomena admit of mathematical formulations in terms of self-adjoint differential systems.

CHAPTER 16

Generalized orthogonality. Of the methods for the determination of coefficients in a trigonometric representation, that of Euler (Chapter 8) was seen to be by all odds the simpler one. It is more direct and very much shorter than Fourier's (Chapters 10, 11). And this advantage was recognized in Chapter 11 to be attributable essentially to the fact that from the very start it exploits strategically the peculiar properties of the functions in terms of which the representation is made. These properties are particularly those which enter into the so-called *orthogonality* of the trigonometric functions, namely, those which come to their most familiar expression, at least in part, in the relations (12.1), (12.3), (8.10) *etc.* A directive influence upon the present discussion is evidently to be discerned in this fact. The rôle that is filled by the trigonometric functions in the classical theory is to be assigned in this generalization to the characteristic solutions of the boundary problem (13.10). The discovery of interrelations between these solutions, and especially of such as reduce to orthogonality under suitable specialization, therefore appears as a significant issue at this turn.

In terms of the coefficients $h_1^{(r)}$, $h_2^{(r)}$, with which the relation (14.10) maintains, let the function $U_r(x, \lambda)$ be defined by the formula

$$U_r(x, \lambda) \equiv h_2^{(r)}\phi_1(x, \lambda) + h_1^{(r)}\phi_2(x, \lambda). \tag{16.1}$$

This is evidently a solution of the differential equation (13.3), specifically one which becomes a characteristic solution of the boundary problem (13.10) when λ is given the value λ_r. If, then, as usual, $v_n(x)$ is used to designate the nth characteristic solution of the adjoint problem, it is clear that

$$L(U_r, \lambda) = 0,$$
$$M(v_n, \lambda) = (\lambda - \lambda_n) q(x) v_n(x).$$

In virtue of these relations the identity (15.2), with $U_r(x, \lambda)$ and $v_n(x)$ in the place of ϕ and ψ, yields, upon integration, the equation

$$(16.2) \qquad (\lambda - \lambda_n) \int_a^b q(x) U_r(x, \lambda) v_n(x) dx = Q(U_r, v_n, a) - Q(U_r, v_n, b).$$

Now when $\mu_1^{(n)}$, $\mu_2^{(n)}$ and λ_n stand in the place of μ_1, μ_2 and λ, the boundary relations of the system (15.9) are fulfilled by the function $v_n(x)$, while their right-hand members may be written as

$$\mu_2^{(n)}[\alpha_{1,j}(\lambda) - (\lambda - \lambda_n)\beta_{1,j}] + \mu_1^{(n)}[\alpha_{2,j}(\lambda) - (\lambda - \lambda_n)\beta_{2,j}], \qquad j = 1, 2, 3, 4.$$

Upon multiplying them respectively by $U_r'(a, \lambda)$, $U_r(a, \lambda)$, $U_r'(b, \lambda)$, $U_r(b, \lambda)$, and then adding them, it is accordingly found that

$$Q(U_r, v_n, a) - Q(U_r, v_n, b) = \mu_2^{(n)} A_1(U_r, \lambda) + \mu_1^{(n)} A_2(U_r, \lambda) - (\lambda - \lambda_n)[\mu_2^{(n)} B_1(U_r) + \mu_1^{(n)} B_2(U_r)],$$

the symbols B_i having been introduced here in the sense

$$(16.3) \qquad B_i(\phi) \equiv \beta_{i,1}\phi'(a) + \beta_{i,2}\phi(a) + \beta_{i,3}\phi'(b) + \beta_{i,4}\phi(b), \qquad i = 1, 2.$$

The equation (16.2) therefore assumes, after a division by $(\lambda - \lambda_n)$, the form

$$(16.4) \qquad \int_a^b q(x) U_r(x, \lambda) v_n(x) dx + \mu_2^{(n)} B_1(U_r) + \mu_1^{(n)} B_2(U_r) = \Phi_{n,r}(\lambda),$$

in which the right-hand member is explicitly given by the formula

$$(16.5) \qquad \Phi_{n,r}(\lambda) \equiv \frac{\mu_2^{(n)} A_1(U_r, \lambda) + \mu_1^{(n)} A_2(U_r, \lambda)}{\lambda - \lambda_n}, \qquad \text{if } \lambda \neq \lambda_n.$$

We are to be specifically concerned with the form of the relation (16.4) and hence with the value of the expression (16.5) when $\lambda = \lambda_r$.

From the relations (16.1) it is to be seen at once that

$$(16.6) \qquad A_j(U_r, \lambda) = h_2^{(r)} A_{j,1}(\lambda) + h_1^{(r)} A_{j,2}(\lambda), \qquad j = 1, 2.$$

The equations (14.9) thus assure the relations

$$(16.7) \qquad A_j(U_r, \lambda_r) = 0, \qquad j = 1, 2,$$

and from these it follows that the expression (16.5) vanishes at λ_r, whenever $\lambda_r \neq \lambda_n$. For its evaluation at $\lambda = \lambda_n$ we may observe that by virtue of the formulas (16.6) the numerator of the expression (16.5) may be written out explicitly as

$$h_2^{(r)}[\mu_2^{(n)}A_{1,1}(\lambda) + \mu_1^{(n)}A_{2,1}(\lambda)] + h_1^{(r)}[\mu_2^{(n)}A_{1,2}(\lambda) + \mu_1^{(n)}A_{2,2}(\lambda)],$$

and that the relations (15.14) thereupon show it to reduce to zero at λ_n. At this value of λ the expression (16.5) is, therefore, indeterminate. To fulfill the relation (16.4) it must, however, be continuous. The value to be assigned it at λ_n is, therefore, that which is obtainable by an application of the familiar "l'Hospital's rule," namely, with the use of a superscribing dot to denote a derivative with respect to λ, thus

$$\dot{F}(x, \lambda_n) \equiv \left[\frac{\partial}{\partial\lambda}F(x, \lambda)\right]_{\lambda=\lambda_n}, \tag{16.8}$$

the value

$$\Phi_{n,r}(\lambda_n) = \mu_2^{(n)}\dot{A}_1(U_r, \lambda_n) + \mu_1^{(n)}\dot{A}_2(U_r, \lambda_n). \tag{16.9}$$

For the further analysis of this formula we must distinguish between the case in which the index of λ_n is 1, and that in which it is 2.

If λ_n is of the index 1 we are still concerned with the formula (16.9) only in the case that $r=n$. In this instance the relation

$$A_{\sigma,\tau}(\lambda_n) \neq 0, \tag{16.10}$$

is, moreover, fulfilled for some choice of the subscripts σ, τ, and this implies through the equations (14.9) and (15.14) that

$$h_\tau^{(n)} \neq 0, \qquad \mu_\sigma^{(n)} \neq 0. \tag{16.11}$$

Now the relations (14.4) and (16.1) assure the equation

$$\begin{vmatrix} A_1(U_n, \lambda) & A_2(U_n, \lambda) \\ A_{1,\tau}(\lambda) & A_{2,\tau}(\lambda) \end{vmatrix} = (-1)^\tau h_\tau^{(n)}\Delta(\lambda),$$

and a differentiation of this, together with the evaluations (16.7), shows that

$$\begin{vmatrix} \dot{A}_1(U_n, \lambda_n) & \dot{A}_2(U_n, \lambda_n) \\ A_{1,\tau}(\lambda_n) & A_{2,\tau}(\lambda_n) \end{vmatrix} = (-1)^\tau h_\tau^{(n)}\dot{\Delta}(\lambda_n).$$

The determinant on the left of this equality is, however, that of the system which is comprised of the equation (16.9) with $r=n$, and the equation

$$0 = \mu_2^{(n)}A_{1,\tau}(\lambda_n) + \mu_1^{(n)}A_{2,\tau}(\lambda_n),$$

which is one of the pair (15.14). The eliminant of the coefficient of $A_{\sigma,\tau}(\lambda_n)$ in this system is, therefore, found to be the relation

$$\Phi_{n,n}(\lambda_n) = (-1)^{\sigma+\tau}\frac{h_\tau^{(n)}\mu_\sigma^{(n)}}{A_{\sigma,\tau}(\lambda_n)}\dot{\Delta}(\lambda_n). \tag{16.12}$$

The right-hand member of this is different from zero or equal to zero according as the multiplicity of λ_n as a root of the characteristic equation (14.5) is equal to or greater than 1. It has been shown thus for the case at hand, namely when the index of λ_n is 1, that the relations

$$\Phi_{n,r}(\lambda_r)\begin{cases}=0, & \text{if } r \neq n,\\ \neq 0, & \text{if } r = n,\end{cases} \tag{16.13}$$

maintain if and only if the multiplicity of λ_n and its index are equal.

Consider now the case of a characteristic value λ_n of the index 2, and let its designations in the array (14.7) be λ_m and λ_{m+1}. The set of equations obtained from the relation (16.9) when n and r are given values from the pair m, $m+1$, yield the determinant relation

$$\begin{vmatrix} \Phi_{m,m}(\lambda_n) & \Phi_{m+1,m}(\lambda_n) \\ \Phi_{m,m+1}(\lambda_n) & \Phi_{m+1,m+1}(\lambda_n) \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} \dot{A}_1(U_m, \lambda_n) & \dot{A}_2(U_m, \lambda_n) \\ \dot{A}_1(U_{m+1}, \lambda_n) & \dot{A}_2(U_{m+1}, \lambda_n) \end{vmatrix} \cdot \begin{vmatrix} \mu_2^{(m)} & \mu_2^{(m+1)} \\ \mu_1^{(m)} & \mu_1^{(m+1)} \end{vmatrix}.$$

Now the formulas (16.6) assure the equation

$$\begin{vmatrix} A_1(U_m, \lambda) & A_2(U_m, \lambda) \\ A_1(U_{m+1}, \lambda) & A_2(U_{m+1}, \lambda) \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} h_2^{(m)} & h_2^{(m+1)} \\ h_1^{(m)} & h_1^{(m+1)} \end{vmatrix} \Delta(\lambda),$$

and a two-fold differentiation of this together with the evaluation (16.7) leads to the equality

$$2\begin{vmatrix} \dot{A}_1(U_m, \lambda_n) & \dot{A}_2(U_m, \lambda_n) \\ \dot{A}_1(U_{m+1}, \lambda_n) & \dot{A}_2(U_{m+1}, \lambda_n) \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} h_2^{(m)} & h_2^{(m+1)} \\ h_1^{(m)} & h_1^{(m+1)} \end{vmatrix} \ddot{\Delta}(\lambda_n).$$

The combination of this result with that above evidently leads to the relation

$$\begin{vmatrix} \Phi_{m,m}(\lambda_n) & \Phi_{m+1,m}(\lambda_n) \\ \Phi_{m,m+1}(\lambda_n) & \Phi_{m+1,m+1}(\lambda_n) \end{vmatrix} = \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} \mu_2^{(m)} & \mu_2^{(m+1)} \\ \mu_1^{(m)} & \mu_1^{(m+1)} \end{vmatrix} \cdot \begin{vmatrix} h_2^{(m)} & h_2^{(m+1)} \\ h_1^{(m)} & h_1^{(m+1)} \end{vmatrix} \ddot{\Delta}(\lambda_n). \tag{16.14}$$

If the multiplicity of λ_n is greater than 2 the right-hand member of the equation (16.14) is zero. It is clear that in that case the equation is contradicted by the relations (16.13) and that these latter, therefore, do not maintain. If, on the other hand, the multiplicity of λ_n is 2, namely the same as its index, no such contradiction is involved. If in this case the parameter pairs μ_1^m, μ_2^m and μ_1^{m+1}, μ_2^{m+1}, which have thus far been left unspecified except that they be linearly independent, are now specified to fulfill the relations

$$\begin{aligned} \mu_2^{(m)}\dot{A}_1(U_{m+1}, \lambda_n) + \mu_1^{(m)}\dot{A}_2(U_{m+1}, \lambda_n) &= 0, \\ \mu_2^{(m+1)}\dot{A}_1(U_m, \lambda_n) + \mu_1^{(m+1)}\dot{A}_2(U_m, \lambda_n) &= 0, \end{aligned} \tag{16.15}$$

it follows at once through the equations (16.9) that $\Phi_{m,m+1}(\lambda_n) = \Phi_{m+1,m}(\lambda_n) = 0$,

and then through the equation (16.14) that $\Phi_{n,n}(\lambda_n) \neq 0$, for $n=m$, $m+1$. The relations (16.13), which by virtue of the equation (16.4) take the form

$$(16.16)\quad \int_a^b q(x)u_r(x)v_n(x)dx + \mu_2^{(n)}B_1(u_r) + \mu_1^{(n)}B_2(u_r) \begin{cases} = 0, & \text{if } r \neq n, \\ \neq 0, & \text{if } r = n, \end{cases}$$

thus maintain whenever the characteristic value λ_n is one whose index and multiplicity are equal, and do not maintain in any other case. These relations are the ones that were sought. They are, namely, those which are expressive of the generalized orthogonality which subsists among the characteristic solutions of two boundary problems that are adjoint.

CHAPTER 17

The formal representation of an arbitrary function. In the instance of any boundary problem which admits of infinitely many characteristic solutions, the physical context in connection with which the problem arises leads in a natural way to the question of the representability of an arbitrary function in terms of these solutions in the manner

$$(17.1)\quad f(x) = \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} c_r u_r(x).$$

This has already been observed in several instances of the Fourier theory, which is, of course, exemplary of the more general case. As in the trigonometric case, the crux of the formal problem thrown up in this way devolves upon a determination of the coefficients c_r. We shall consider this matter now, not in a rigorous way, but formally. The relation (17.1) will, therefore, be taken to be amenable to all such operations as shall be made upon it, and no consideration will be given to matters of convergence. The deductions will, therefore, of course, be devoid of all power of proof. Their purpose is purely an exploratory one.

To begin with, let the symbols f_i, $i=1, 2$ be used as abbreviations for the expressions $B_i(f)$, as these latter are obtainable from the relations (16.3). The equation (17.1) thus has associated with it the pair of auxiliary relations

$$(17.2)\quad f_i = \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} c_r B_i(u_r), \qquad i = 1, 2,$$

and in terms of the elements $f(x)$, f_1 and f_2 the formulas

$$(17.3)\quad I_n(f) \equiv \int_a^b q(x)v_n(x)f(x)dx + \mu_2^{(n)}f_1 + \mu_1^{(n)}f_2, \qquad n = 0, 1, 2, \cdots,$$

may be taken to define their left-hand members. Upon substituting into these formulas the infinite series evaluations (17.1) and (17.2), interchanging the order of the integrations and summations, and collecting the terms in any coefficient c_r, it is found that alternatively

$$I_n(f) = \sum_{r=0}^{\infty} c_r \Phi_{n,r}(\lambda_r).$$

The symbols $\Phi_{n,r}(\lambda_r)$ in this stand, as heretofore, for the left-hand members of the relations (16.16). Since these latter vanish whenever $r \neq n$, the equation reduces to the simple form

$$I_n(f) = c_n \Phi_{n,n}(\lambda_n). \tag{17.4}$$

Let it be assumed now as a hypothesis which is to cover the entire remaining portion of these deductions, that *the boundary problem* (13.10) *in question is one for which there are infinitely many characteristic values, and for which, moreover, each of these is of a multiplicity that is equal to its index.* By the relations (16.13) the equations (17.4) yield, then, for each n, the evaluation

$$c_n = \frac{I_n(f)}{\Phi_{n,n}(\lambda_n)}. \tag{17.5}$$

It will be evident even from the most casual review of the procedure described that it is limited, insofar as actual applicability is concerned, to the functions of a materially restricted class. The expressions $B_i(f)$ are, for instance, significant only for functions that are differentiable at $x = a$ and $x = b$, while other heavy restrictions are manifestly involved. Beyond that it is clear that the result can imply nothing of the representability of a function $f(x)$, since that representability was at the very outset assumed. A theory of representation must, accordingly, be approached differently.

Let it be supposed, therefore, that a function $f(x)$ which is arbitrary except that it possesses certain requisite properties of integrability, and a pair of constants f_1, f_2 are given. The constants are likewise to be regarded as arbitrary. In particular they need have no specific relation to the values of $f(x)$. From these elements $f(x)$, f_1, and f_2 the values $I_n(f)$ are constructible through the formulas (17.3). There is thus associated with them a sequence of constants (17.5), or, in other words, a series of the form (17.1). We shall indicate this association in the manner

$$f(x) \sim \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{I_n(f) u_n(x)}{\Phi_{n,n}(\lambda_n)}. \tag{17.6}$$

There is no implication at this stage that the series here written down is convergent, or, even should that be the case, that its value is $f(x)$. The continuing theory is to be shaped toward the investigation of those matters. As it stands, the series is to be approached afresh and with no regard for the manner in which it was deduced. Its convergence is to be studied. Any conditions, if such are found, under which the series does converge and to the value $f(x)$, will be conditions under which the symbol of association in the relation (17.6) may be replaced by one of equality and a theory of representation maintains. The direction of our further theoretical developments is thus forecast.

CHAPTER 18

Some examples. Throughout the discussion thus far no references whatsoever to illustrative examples have been made. A stage has now been reached, however, at which the consideration of some explicit cases may be both interesting and instructive. We shall, therefore, interrupt the theoretical developments at this point to review some particular examples with the special purpose of illustrating concretely some of the salient features of the theory as it has thus far been deduced. It will be seen in connection with one of these cases how the present more general theory wholly includes that of Fourier.

Because of the breadth of the basis upon which the theory is built, it is a simple matter to construct in great variety examples that are subsumed under it. In the choice that is set forth below, however, an effort has been made to avoid in as large a measure as possible all such complications as are not germane to the matters essentially at issue. Such could be only distracting and not illuminating. For this reason, in particular, the boundary problems that are drawn upon have all been chosen to be such as involve differential equations that are explicitly solvable. The theory in no way requires that. For convenience in the notation the symbol ρ has been introduced to stand for a square root of λ, thus

$$\rho^2 = \lambda. \tag{18.1}$$

This, however, is to be looked upon merely as an abbreviation. The effective parameter will continue to be λ even when an expression is written in terms of ρ. It will generally be found on this account that a form that is indeterminate as to ρ is quite specific in λ, as is the case with the form $\sin \alpha\rho/\rho$, which near $\lambda = 0$ is to be thought of as defined by the power series

$$\alpha - \frac{\alpha^3}{3!}\lambda + \frac{\alpha^5}{5!}\lambda^2 \cdots .$$

It may also be worth observing in conjunction with the notation defined through the relation (16.8), that

$$\dot{F} = \frac{1}{2\rho}\frac{\partial F}{\partial \rho}. \tag{18.2}$$

Example 1. The boundary problem

$$u'' - \frac{2}{x}u' - \left(\lambda - \frac{2}{x^2}\right)u = 0,$$

$$u\left(\frac{\pi}{2}\right) = 0, \tag{18.3}$$

$$u\left(\frac{3\pi}{2}\right) = 0.$$

The fundamental interval at the ends of which the boundary relations of this problem apply, namely $\pi/2 \leqq x \leqq 3\pi/2$, is one upon which the differential equation has continuous coefficients and no singular points. Beyond that the coefficients $\alpha_{i,j}$ of the boundary relations are the elements of the matrix

$$\left\| \begin{matrix} 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{matrix} \right\|,$$

and this, the matrix (13.8), is of the rank 2 for all values of λ. The boundary problem is thus of the type (13.10). Its differential equation admits as linearly independent solutions analytic in λ, the functions

$$\phi_1(x, \lambda) \equiv x[e^{\rho x} + e^{-\rho x}],$$

$$\phi_2(x, \lambda) \equiv \frac{x}{\rho}[e^{\rho x} - e^{-\rho x}],$$

and as it is formed from these the determinant (14.4) is

$$\Delta(\lambda) \equiv \begin{vmatrix} \frac{\pi}{2}[e^{\rho\pi/2} + e^{-\rho\pi/2}] & \frac{\pi}{2\rho}[e^{\rho\pi/2} - e^{-\rho\pi/2}] \\ \frac{3\pi}{2}[e^{3\rho\pi/2} + e^{-3\rho\pi/2}] & \frac{3\pi}{2\rho}[e^{3\rho\pi/2} - e^{-3\rho\pi/2}] \end{vmatrix}.$$

The evaluation

$$\Delta(\lambda) = \frac{3\pi^2}{2}\left[\frac{e^{\rho\pi} - e^{-\rho\pi}}{\rho}\right],$$

shows that its zeros occur at the points $\rho = \pm ni$, with $n = 1, 2, 3, \cdots$. At each of these points the determinant $\Delta(\lambda)$ is reduced to the rank 1 and $\dot{\Delta}(\lambda)$ is not zero. The characteristic values, which are infinitely many, are thus all of the index and multiplicity 1. They are to be arranged after the fashion (14.7) in the order

$$\lambda_n = -(n+1)^2, \qquad n = 0, 1, 2, \cdots.$$

When r is any even integer, say $r = 2n$, the coefficient of $h_2^{(2n)}$ in the first one of the equations (14.9) is zero. This is seen to determine $h_1^{(2n)}$ to be zero, while leaving $h_2^{(2n)}$ arbitrary (not zero). This latter coefficient may evidently be chosen, therefore, so that the respective characteristic solution, as it is given by the formula (14.10), is explicitly

$$u_{2n}(x) \equiv x \cos(2n+1)x.$$

In a quite similar manner it is found that $h_2^{(2n-1)} = 0$, and that we may accordingly choose

$$u_{2n-1}(x) \equiv x \sin 2nx.$$

By the formulas (15.9) the differential system adjoint to (18.3) is

$$v'' + \frac{2}{x} v' - \lambda v = 0,$$

$$v\left(\frac{\pi}{2}\right) = 0,$$

$$-v'\left(\frac{\pi}{2}\right) - \frac{4}{\pi} v\left(\frac{\pi}{2}\right) = \mu_2,$$

$$-v\left(\frac{3\pi}{2}\right) = 0,$$

$$v'\left(\frac{3\pi}{2}\right) + \frac{4}{3\pi} v\left(\frac{3\pi}{2}\right) = \mu_1.$$

Of the equations in this, the first, the second, and the fourth, effectively define the adjoint boundary problem, while the remaining ones give equivalents of the parameters μ_1 and μ_2. The formulas (15.5) yield as solutions of the differential equation in this system the functions

$$\psi_1(x, \lambda) \equiv \frac{-1}{4\rho x} [e^{\rho x} - e^{-\rho x}],$$

$$\psi_2(x, \lambda) \equiv \frac{1}{4x} [e^{\rho x} + e^{-\rho x}].$$

The equations (15.16) show that for any n, $k_1^{2n-1} = 0$ and $k_2^{2n} = 0$. The characteristic solutions $v_n(x)$ may accordingly be taken to be

$$v_{2n-1}(x) \equiv \frac{\sin 2nx}{x},$$

$$v_{2n}(x) \equiv \frac{\cos (2n+1)x}{x}.$$

The boundary problem (18.3) does not involve λ in its boundary relations. Hence the constants $\beta_{i,j}$ that appear in the formulas (13.7) and (16.3) are all zero, and the forms (16.3) accordingly all vanish. The relation (16.4) thus shows that

$$\Phi_{n,r}(\lambda_r) = -\int_{\pi/2}^{3\pi/2} u_r(x) v_n(x) dx,$$

and the relations of orthogonality (16.16) therefore assume a familiar, purely trigonometrical form. With the special choice of constants $f_1 = 0$, $f_2 = 0$, the formulas (17.3) and (17.6) yield, in association with an arbitrary function $f(x)$, the series of characteristic solutions

$$f(x) \sim c_0 x \cos x + c_1 x \sin 2x + c_2 x \cos 3x + c_3 x \sin 4x + \cdots,$$

with the coefficients

$$c_{2n-1} = \frac{2}{\pi}\int_{\pi/2}^{3\pi/2} f(s)\,\frac{\sin 2ns}{s}\,ds,$$

$$c_{2n} = \frac{2}{\pi}\int_{\pi/2}^{3\pi/2} f(s)\,\frac{\cos(2n+1)s}{s}\,ds.$$

Example 2. The boundary problem

$$\begin{aligned} u'' - \frac{1}{x}u' + \frac{16\pi^2 x^2}{9}\lambda u &= 0, \\ u(1) &= 0, \\ 2u'(1) - u'(2) &= 0. \end{aligned} \tag{18.4}$$

This boundary problem is of the form (13.10) on the fundamental interval $1 \leqq x \leqq 2$. Its differential equation admits the solutions

$$\phi_1(x,\lambda) \equiv \cos\left(\frac{2\pi\rho}{3}x^2\right),$$

$$\phi_2(x,\lambda) \equiv \frac{1}{\rho}\sin\left(\frac{2\pi\rho}{3}x^2\right),$$

and as formed from these functions

$$\Delta(\lambda) \equiv \begin{vmatrix} \cos\left(\frac{2\pi\rho}{3}\right) & \frac{1}{\rho}\sin\left(\frac{2\pi\rho}{3}\right) \\ \frac{8\pi\rho}{3}\left[\sin\left(\frac{8\pi\rho}{3}\right) - \sin\left(\frac{2\pi\rho}{3}\right)\right] & \frac{8\pi}{3}\left[\cos\left(\frac{2\pi\rho}{3}\right) - \cos\left(\frac{8\pi\rho}{3}\right)\right] \end{vmatrix}.$$

The evaluation

$$\Delta(\lambda) = \frac{8\pi}{3}(1 - \cos 2\pi\rho),$$

shows that the zeros occur at the points $\rho = 0 \pm 1, \pm 2, \cdots$. There are thus infinitely many characteristic values, and since at each of them the determinant is reduced to the rank 1 they are all of the index 1. We may accordingly write

$$\lambda_n = n^2, \qquad n = 0, 1, 2, \cdots.$$

But it is now seen at once that $\dot{\Delta}(\lambda_n) = 0$ for each n. The characteristic values are thus each of a multiplicity that is higher than its index and the boundary problem is therefore excluded by the hypothesis of chapter 17.

Example 3. The boundary problem

$$\begin{aligned} u'' + \lambda u &= 0, \\ u(-\pi) - u(\pi) &= 0, \\ u'(-\pi) - u'(\pi) &= 0. \end{aligned} \tag{18.5}$$

On the interval $-\pi \leqq x \leqq \pi$ this boundary problem is of the form (13.10). We find for it

$$\phi_1(x, \lambda) \equiv \cos \rho x, \qquad \phi_2(x, \lambda) \equiv \frac{\sin \rho x}{\rho}, \tag{18.6}$$

and accordingly

$$\Delta(\lambda) \equiv \begin{vmatrix} 0 & -\frac{2}{\rho} \sin \rho\pi \\ 2\rho \sin \rho\pi & 0 \end{vmatrix}. \tag{18.7}$$

Since from this

$$\Delta(\lambda) = 4 \sin^2 \rho\pi, \tag{18.8}$$

its zeros occur for $\rho = 0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \cdots$. At the first of these the rank of the determinant (18.7) is 1, at all others it is 0. The first characteristic value $\lambda_0 = 0$ is thus of the index 1 and the remaining ones are of the index 2. They are accordingly to be arranged thus

$$\lambda_0 = 0, \qquad \lambda_{2n-1} = \lambda_{2n} = n^2, \qquad n = 1, 2, 3, \cdots. \tag{18.9}$$

Each value is found to be of a multiplicity equal to its index. By the relations (14.9) it is shown that $h_1^{(0)} = 0$, so that the first characteristic solution is $u_0(x) \equiv 1$, or any multiple of this. For the other characteristic values the equations (14.9) are vacuous and the coefficients $h_1^{(r)}$ and $h_2^{(r)}$ accordingly arbitrary. We may therefore choose $u_{2n-1}(x)$ and $u_{2n}(x)$ as $\phi_1(x, \lambda_{2n-1})$ and $\phi_2(x, \lambda_{2n})$ respectively,

$$\begin{aligned} u_{2n-1}(x) &\equiv \cos nx, \\ u_{2n}(x) &\equiv \sin nx. \end{aligned} \tag{18.10}$$

The boundary problem (18.5) is readily seen to be self-adjoint. It is, therefore, admissible to choose $v_n(x) \equiv u_n(x)$ for every n. Since the boundary relations are independent of λ the forms $B_i(u_n)$ all vanish, and it is found accordingly that

$$\Phi_{n,r}(\lambda_r) = \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} u_r(x) u_n(x) dx.$$

The relations (16.13) are thus, in this instance, merely expressive of the familiar property of orthogonality of the sines and cosines of multiples of x. With the

choice of constants $f_1=0$, $f_2=0$, the formulas (17.3) and (17.5) define the coefficients c_n to be those of Fourier, and the relation (17.6) is simply the association of a function $f(x)$ with its Fourier series.

CHAPTER 19

Another example. Although the examples that have been cited in the chapter above were earmarked among themselves by some conspicuous qualitative dissimilarities, they fail, even when taken together, to illustrate adequately some of the more pronounced departures from classical theory which the generalization permits. The reason for this lies in the fact that the boundary problems that are basic to them all involve only such boundary relations as do not depend upon the parameter λ. In the following a problem of the excepted class is to be briefly analyzed.

Example 4. The boundary problem

$$\begin{aligned} u'' + 4\lambda u &= 0, \\ u(0) &= 0, \\ u'(1) + [\nu^2 + 1 - \lambda]u(1) &= 0, \end{aligned} \tag{19.1}$$

with ν standing for any real constant.

Such boundary problems as this present themselves in connection with a variety of physical investigations of which the following ones may be looked upon as in some measure typical. [18]

Problem (*i*). A right cylindrical solid with a cross-section of any shape and size, and with plane terminal faces at $x=0$ and $x=1$, has its lateral surface insulated against the passage of heat and has an initial distribution of temperatures depending only upon the longitudinal coördinate x. At the time $t=0$ this solid is placed in contact with a quantity of liquid at one of its terminal faces, and the liquid is thereupon kept well stirred to insure that the temperature is uniform throughout it at each instant. The temperature of the liquid and the temperature distribution in the solid at any subsequent time are to be calculated.

Problem (*ii*). A solid metal sphere with an initial distribution of temperatures that is symmetrical about its center, is cooled by being plunged into a mass of liquid. The liquid is kept well stirred. The temperatures of the liquid and those within the solid during the cooling are to be determined.

Problem (*iii*). A mass of material is uniformly distributed at the time $t=0$ throughout a jelly in a cylindrical container. The jelly is covered with a liquid that is kept well stirred. From the experimental measurements of the concentration of material in the liquid as a function of the time, the coefficient of diffusion of the material in the jelly is to be found.

The boundary problem (19.1) is of the form (13.10). Its differential equation admits as solutions the functions

$$\phi_1(x, \lambda) \equiv \cos 2\rho x,$$
$$\phi_2(x, \lambda) \equiv \frac{\sin 2\rho x}{\rho}, \tag{19.2}$$

and the evaluation of the determinant

$$\Delta(\lambda) \equiv \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ -2\rho \sin 2\rho + (\nu^2+1-\lambda) \cos 2\rho & 2\cos 2\rho + (\nu^2+1-\lambda)\dfrac{\sin 2\rho}{\rho} \end{vmatrix}, \tag{19.3}$$

gives as the characteristic equation

$$2\cos 2\rho + (\nu^2 + 1 - \rho^2)\frac{\sin 2\rho}{\rho} = 0. \tag{19.4a}$$

Alternative forms of this are

$$\cot 2\rho = \frac{\rho}{2} - \frac{\nu^2 + 1}{2\rho}, \tag{19.4b}$$

and

$$e^{4\rho i} = \frac{(\rho + i)^2 - \nu^2}{(\rho - i)^2 - \nu^2}. \tag{19.4c}$$

The characteristic values are thus the squares of the roots of a transcendental equation and it is readily seen that they do not admit of expression by any elementary formula. The essential facts concerning them are nevertheless deducible.

Thus if ρ is any complex value with a positive imaginary part, the point $(\rho+i)$ in the complex plane is more distant than the point $(\rho-i)$ from any point on the axis of reals, and hence in particular from the points ν and $-\nu$. Hence

$$|(\rho + i) - \nu| > |(\rho - i) - \nu|,$$
$$|(\rho + i) + \nu| > |(\rho - i) + \nu|,$$

and from these relations it follows that the right-hand member of the equation (19.4c) is greater than 1 in absolute value. But for a value of ρ such as this the left-hand member of that equation has an absolute value that is less than 1. This ρ is, therefore, not one for which the equation is satisfied. A similar argument establishes that same fact for any value of ρ that has a negative imaginary part. The roots of the equation must thus all be real.

Now that being so, it is observable from the equation in the form (19.4b), that its roots are the abscissas of the points common to the graphs

$$y = \cot 2\rho,$$

$$y = \frac{\rho}{2} - \frac{\nu^2 + 1}{2\rho},$$

in the Cartesian (ρ, y) plane. These graphs are easily seen to intersect infinitely often and without being tangent to each other at any intersection point. From this it follows at once that there are infinitely many characteristic values and that they are each of the multiplicity 1. From the general relation (14.6), or from the fact that the determinant (19.3) has a constant non-vanishing element, it is to be seen that every characteristic value is of the index 1.

By the first one of the equations (14.9) it is shown that for each r, $h_2^{(r)} = 0$. The characteristic solutions may, therefore, be taken as the functions

$$u_n(x) \equiv \sin 2\sqrt{\lambda_n}\, x, \tag{19.5}$$

and since the boundary problem is self-adjoint we may also take $v_n(x) \equiv u_n(x)$. The formulas (16.3) and the boundary relations of the system (15.9) give in this case the evaluations

$$B_1(u_r) = 0, \qquad B_2(u_r) = -u_r(1),$$

$$\mu_2^{(n)} = -v_n'(0), \qquad \mu_1^{(n)} = -v_n(1).$$

It is thus found from the equations (16.4) that

$$\Phi_{n,r}(\lambda_r) = 4\int_0^1 u_r(x)u_n(x)dx + u_r(1)u_n(1).$$

Because of the simple form of the functions $u_n(x)$ the integration in this expression is explicitly possible, and the relations of generalized orthogonality (16.16) are therefore verifiable upon the basis of the equation (19.4a). The formulas (17.3) and (17.5) yield as the coefficients in the association

$$f(x) \sim \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} c_n \sin 2\sqrt{\lambda_n}\, x, \tag{19.6}$$

the values

$$c_n = \frac{4\int_0^1 f(s)u_n(s)ds - f_1u_n'(0) - f_2u_n(1)}{4\int_0^1 u_n^2(s)ds + u_n^2(1)}. \tag{19.7}$$

A scrutiny of the formulas (19.7) reveals one of the salient features in which this and the Fourier representations are effectively dissimilar. While the coefficients of the latter are wholly determined by the function $f(x)$, those given by the formulas (19.7) depend also upon the prescribed constants f_1 and f_2. The same function $f(x)$ may thus be associated here with many different representations. This is quite consonant with the nature of the physical problems from which boundary problems of the type (19.1) arise, as may easily be appreciated from a consideration of the problems (i) and (ii) that were cited above. In each of those cases the function $f(x)$ represents the initial temperatures in the solid. The subsequent temperatures therein depend, however, not only upon these but also upon the initial temperature of the fluid into which the solid is immersed or with which it is placed in contact. It is through the constants f_1 and f_2 that this initial fluid temperature comes to account. [19]

CHAPTER 20

The Green's function. A noteworthy feature of the Fourier's series, and one which is almost invariably taken as the point of departure for studies of its convergence properties, is the fact that any initial segment of it may be explicitly summed and hence expressed by a compact formula. This was observed in chapter 12, the summation of the segment $S_N(x)$ as given by the relation (12.7) having been accomplished there by the formula (12.8). It is far from obvious that the advantages inherent in this are retainable in the generalization of the theory, for the derivation of the formula in question is directly and explicitly based upon relationships that are peculiarly trigonometric. We shall show that this may nevertheless be done, the key to the requisite deductions residing in a certain function, the so-called Green's function, which generally plays an important rôle in the theory of boundary problems.

Let λ be taken and retained throughout the deductions of this chapter as *not* a characteristic value of the boundary problem (13.10). This problem then admits of no solution, which is to say that a function which fulfills its boundary relations cannot also satisfy the stipulations of its differential equation for all values of x upon the fundamental interval. Now it is significant that the concession which must be made on the part of the differential equation is very slight, amounting to no more, in fact, than the partial relaxation of its stipulations at only a single point $x=s$ of the interval. The function which fulfills the specifications except at $x=s$ may even be required to be continuous there. The failure will occur in its first derivative, which is subject at this point to an ordinary discontinuity. When this discontinuity is of the proper sign and of the unit magnitude, matters which are adjustable without otherwise affecting the issues, the function is called the Green's function. Inasmuch as it depends upon the location of the point s as well as upon the variables x and λ, it is to be denoted by the symbol $G(x, s, \lambda)$. Its properties, by way of summary, are, then:

(i) As a function of x it satisfies the differential equation of the system (13.10) over each of the intervals $a<x<s$, and $s<x<b$;

(ii) It is continuous in x over the whole interval (a, b), but its derivative is discontinuous at the point $x=s$ to accord with the prescription

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial x}G(x, s, \lambda)\Big]_{x=s+} - \frac{\partial}{\partial x}G(x, s, \lambda)\Big]_{x=s-} = 1; \tag{20.1}$$

(iii) It fulfills the boundary relations of the differential system (13.10).

By these properties the function $G(x, s, \lambda)$ is uniquely determined, as the following derivation of its form will incidentally show.

As a solution of the differential equation (13.3) the function is expressible upon each of the intervals (a, s) and (s, b) as a linear combination of the solutions $\phi_j(x, \lambda)$, $j=1, 2$, namely

$$G(x, s, \lambda) = \begin{cases} \gamma_{1,2}\phi_1(x, \lambda) + \gamma_{1,1}\phi_2(x, \lambda), & \text{for } a \leqq x \leqq s, \\ \gamma_{2,2}\phi_1(x, \lambda) + \gamma_{2,1}\phi_2(x, \lambda), & \text{for } s \leqq x \leqq b. \end{cases}$$

The specifications (ii) impose upon these forms the relations

$$\gamma_{2,2}\phi_1(s, \lambda) + \gamma_{2,1}\phi_2(s, \lambda) = \gamma_{1,2}\phi_1(s, \lambda) + \gamma_{1,1}\phi_2(s, \lambda),$$
$$\gamma_{2,2}\phi_1'(s, \lambda) + \gamma_{2,1}\phi_2'(s, \lambda) - \gamma_{1,2}\phi_1'(s, \lambda) - \gamma_{1,1}\phi_2'(s, \lambda) = 1,$$

in other words, a pair of equations which may be solved into the form

$$\gamma_{1,1} = \gamma_{2,1} - \frac{\phi_1(s, \lambda)}{\Omega(s, \lambda)},$$

$$\gamma_{1,2} = \gamma_{2,2} + \frac{\phi_2(s, \lambda)}{\Omega(s, \lambda)}.$$

Because of the formulas (15.5) these relations are alternatively

$$\gamma_{1,1} = \gamma_{2,1} - \psi_2(s, \lambda),$$
$$\gamma_{1,2} = \gamma_{2,2} - \psi_1(s, \lambda).$$

The formulas for $G(x, s, \lambda)$ are, therefore, more explicitly

$$G(x, s, \lambda) = \gamma_{2,2}\phi_1(x, \lambda) + \gamma_{2,1}\phi_2(x, \lambda) + g_1(x, s, \lambda), \tag{20.2}$$

in which the final term is that defined by the relations

$$g_1(x, s, \lambda) = \begin{cases} -\phi_1(x, \lambda)\psi_1(s, \lambda) - \phi_2(x, \lambda)\psi_2(s, \lambda), & \text{for } a \leqq x \leqq s, \\ 0, & \text{for } s \leqq x \leqq b. \end{cases} \tag{20.3}$$

The requirement (iii), that $G(x, s, \lambda)$ fulfill the boundary relations, comes to its expression in terms of the symbols (13.9), (14.3) and (15.11), in the pair of equations

$$\gamma_{2,2}A_{i,1}(\lambda) + \gamma_{2,1}A_{i,2}(\lambda) - A_{i,1}^{(a)}(\lambda)\psi_1(s, \lambda) - A_{i,2}^{(a)}(\lambda)\psi_2(s, \lambda) = 0, \qquad i = 1, 2.$$

Their solution determines for the coefficients $\gamma_{2,2}$ and $\gamma_{2,1}$ the evaluations

$$\gamma_{2,j} = \frac{(-1)^{j+1}}{\Delta(\lambda)} \begin{vmatrix} A_{1,j}(\lambda) & A_{1,1}^{(a)}(\lambda)\psi_1(s, \lambda) + A_{1,2}^{(a)}(\lambda)\psi_2(s, \lambda) \\ A_{2,j}(\lambda) & A_{2,1}^{(a)}(\lambda)\psi_1(s, \lambda) + A_{2,2}^{(a)}(\lambda)\psi_2(s, \lambda) \end{vmatrix}, \qquad j = 1, 2.$$

The substitution of these into the formula (20.2) leads to the result

$$G(x, s, \lambda) = g_1(x, s, \lambda) + \frac{g_2(x, s, \lambda)}{\Delta(\lambda)}, \tag{20.4}$$

in which

$$g_2(x, s, \lambda) = -\begin{vmatrix} \phi_1(x, \lambda) & \phi_2(x, \lambda) & 0 \\ A_{1,1}(\lambda) & A_{1,2}(\lambda) & A_{1,1}^{(a)}(\lambda)\psi_1(s, \lambda) + A_{1,2}^{(a)}(\lambda)\psi_2(s, \lambda) \\ A_{2,1}(\lambda) & A_{2,2}(\lambda) & A_{2,1}^{(a)}(\lambda)\psi_1(s, \lambda) + A_{2,2}^{(a)}(\lambda)\psi_2(s, \lambda) \end{vmatrix}. \tag{20.5}$$

The Green's function has thus been completely determined.

The method which has in this way been described in connection with the differential system (13.10), may now be applied equally well to the calculation of the Green's function $G_a(x, s, \lambda)$ of the adjoint system (15.9). If this is done it will be found that the two Green's functions are simply related by the equation

$$G_a(x, s, \lambda) \equiv G(s, x, \lambda). \tag{20.6}$$

The function (20.4) thus operates as the Green's function of the adjoint differential system when its second argument is taken to be the variable and the first one is fixed. The set of its properties enumerated above may thus be extended to include the following ones:

(iv) As a function of s it satisfies the differential equation of the system (15.9) over each of the intervals $a < s < x$ and $x < s < b$;

(v) It is continuous in s over the whole interval (a, b), but its derivative as to s is discontinuous at the point $s = x$ to accord with the prescription

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial s}G(x, s, \lambda)\Big]_{s=x+} - \frac{\partial}{\partial s}G(x, s, \lambda)\Big]_{s=x-} = 1; \tag{20.7}$$

(vi) As a function of s it fulfills the boundary relations of the differential system (15.9), with appropriate determinations of $\mu_1(x, \lambda)$ and $\mu_2(x, \lambda)$.

It is on the whole simpler to verify these facts than to deduce them. By the formulas (20.4), (20.3) and (20.5), the function $G(x, s, \lambda)$ is evidently expressed as a linear combination of the solutions $\psi_j(s, \lambda)$, $j=1, 2$, on each of the intervals (a, x) and (x, b). The property (iv) is thus assured to it. The forms

$$\phi_1(x, \lambda)\psi_1(s, \lambda) + \phi_2(x, \lambda)\psi_2(s, \lambda),$$
$$\phi_1(x, \lambda)\psi_1'(s, \lambda) + \phi_2(x, \lambda)\psi_2'(s, \lambda),$$

are readily seen from the relations (15.5) and (13.5) to take on the values 0 and 1 respectively at the point $s=x$. By that the properties (v) are implied. Finally the formulas (15.5) and (15.11) may be drawn upon to supply the evaluations

$$A_{i,1}^{(a)}(\lambda)\psi_1(a, \lambda) + A_{i,2}^{(a)}(\lambda)\psi_2(a, \lambda) = \alpha_{i,1}(\lambda), \qquad i = 1, 2.$$

By virtue of them it is clear that

$$G(x, a, \lambda) = \frac{-1}{\Delta(\lambda)} \begin{vmatrix} \phi_1(x, \lambda) & \phi_2(x, \lambda) & 0 \\ A_{1,1}(\lambda) & A_{1,2}(\lambda) & \alpha_{1,1}(\lambda) \\ A_{2,1}(\lambda) & A_{2,2}(\lambda) & \alpha_{2,1}(\lambda) \end{vmatrix}.$$

This, however, is simply the statement that

$$G(x, a, \lambda) = \mu_2(x, \lambda)\alpha_{1,1}(\lambda) + \mu_1(x, \lambda)\alpha_{2,1}(\lambda),$$

namely that the first boundary relation of the system (15.9) is fulfilled, with the parameter values

$$\mu_i(x, \lambda) = \frac{(-1)^i}{\Delta(\lambda)} \begin{vmatrix} \phi_1(x, \lambda) & \phi_2(x, \lambda) \\ A_{i,1}(\lambda) & A_{i,2}(\lambda) \end{vmatrix}, \qquad i = 1, 2. \tag{20.8}$$

By the same procedure it may equally well be shown that the remaining boundary relations are also fulfilled with the same values (20.8). Thus the property (vi) maintains.

Although it will not be relevant to the discussion which follows, a conspicuous property of the Green's function may still be mentioned. This is, namely, that the non-homogeneous differential system

$$L(w, \lambda) = F(x),$$
$$A_1(w, \lambda) = 0,$$
$$A_2(w, \lambda) = 0,$$

which is obviously related to the system (13.10), is solved, whatever the function $F(x)$ may be, by the formula

$$w(x, \lambda) = \int_a^b G(x, s, \lambda)F(s)ds.$$

CHAPTER 21

The residues of the Green's function. If the requirement that λ be fixed is now abandoned and this parameter is, on the contrary, regarded henceforth as a variable that is free to range over the complex plane; it is recognizable from the formulas (20.3) and (20.5) that the functions $g_1(x, s, \lambda)$ and $g_2(x, s, \lambda)$ are analytic in λ. The same is also true of the function $\Delta(\lambda)$. The formula (20.4) therefore shows that the Green's function is analytic except for poles, these latter occurring at and only at the zeros of $\Delta(\lambda)$, namely at the characteristic values. It has been assumed as a part of our general hypothesis that each characteristic value is of a multiplicity equal to its index. As a consequence of that it will be found that for each n the product $(\lambda-\lambda_n)G(x, s, \lambda)$ approaches a finite limit when $\lambda\to\lambda_n$. This limit is known as the *residue* of $G(x, s, \lambda)$ at λ_n. We shall use the prefix "res$_n$" to designate it, thus

$$\text{res}_n\, G(x, s, \lambda) = \lim_{\lambda\to\lambda_n} (\lambda - \lambda_n)G(x, s, \lambda), \tag{21.1}$$

and shall show that certain residues closely related to these are significantly associated with the terms of the series in a representation (17.6).

Since the function $g_1(x, s, \lambda)$ is analytic in λ when x and s have any specified values, this part of $G(x, s, \lambda)$ evidently makes no contribution to the right-hand member of the relation (21.1). It is, therefore, only the part $g_2(x, s, \lambda)/\Delta(\lambda)$ that needs consideration. Upon expanding the determinant (20.5) by the elements of its last column, therefore, it is found that the relation (21.1) may be more explicitly written as

$$\text{res}_n\, G(x, s, \lambda) = \lim_{\lambda\to\lambda_n} (\lambda - \lambda_n) \sum_{i=1}^{2} E_i(x, \lambda)\,[A^{(a)}_{3-i,1}(\lambda)\psi_1(s, \lambda) + A^{(a)}_{3-i,2}(\lambda)\psi_2(s, \lambda)],$$

the functions $E_i(x, \lambda)$ being defined by the formulas

$$E_i(x, \lambda) = \frac{(-1)^i}{\Delta(\lambda)} \begin{vmatrix} \phi_1(x, \lambda) & \phi_2(x, \lambda) \\ A_{i,1}(\lambda) & A_{i,2}(\lambda) \end{vmatrix}, \qquad i = 1, 2. \tag{21.2}$$

From the alternative form

$$\text{res}_n\, G(x, s, \lambda) = \sum_{i=1}^{2} \{\text{res}_n\, E_i(x, \lambda)\}\,[A^{(a)}_{3-i,1}(\lambda_n)\psi_1(s, \lambda_n) + A^{(a)}_{3-i,2}(\lambda_n)\psi_2(s, \lambda_n)], \tag{21.3}$$

it thus follows that the evaluation of the residues of $G(x, s, \lambda)$ may be made to depend upon the determination of residues of the functions (21.2). To make these determinations we must consider separately the case in which the index of λ_n is 1 and that in which it is 2. In doing that it will be convenient to employ the symbol $\delta_{i,j}$ to stand for the "Kronecker delta," namely in the sense

$$\delta_{i,j} = \begin{cases} 1, & \text{if } i = j, \\ 0, & \text{if } i \neq j. \end{cases}$$

Suppose then, to begin with, that λ_n is of the index 1. Then

$$\lim_{\lambda \to \lambda_n} \frac{\Delta(\lambda)}{\lambda - \lambda_n} = \dot{\Delta}(\lambda_n),$$

and there is a pair of subscripts σ, τ, for which the relations (16.10) and (16.11) maintain. It will be clear that we may write

$$(21.4) \qquad (\lambda - \lambda_n)E_i(x, \lambda) = \frac{-(\lambda - \lambda_n)}{\Delta(\lambda)} \begin{vmatrix} \phi_1(x, \lambda) & \phi_2(x, \lambda) & 0 \\ A_{1,1}(\lambda) & A_{1,2}(\lambda) & \delta_{3-i,1} \\ A_{2,1}(\lambda) & A_{2,2}(\lambda) & \delta_{3-i,2} \end{vmatrix}, \quad i = 1, 2,$$

and that therefore

$$(21.5) \qquad \operatorname{res}_n E_i(x, \lambda) = \frac{-1}{\dot{\Delta}(\lambda_n)} \begin{vmatrix} \phi_1(x, \lambda_n) & \phi_2(x, \lambda_n) & 0 \\ A_{1,1}(\lambda_n) & A_{1,2}(\lambda_n) & \delta_{3-i,1} \\ A_{2,1}(\lambda_n) & A_{2,2}(\lambda_n) & \delta_{3-i,2} \end{vmatrix}.$$

This formula may be considerably modified. It will be seen that if it is multiplied on the right by the determinant

$$\begin{vmatrix} h_2^{(n)} & \delta_{1,\tau} & 0 \\ h_1^{(n)} & \delta_{2,\tau} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{vmatrix},$$

and this operation is then compensated for by dividing out the value of this determinant, $(-1)^\tau h_\tau^{(n)}$, the resulting form is, by virtue of the relations (14.9) and (14.10),

$$\frac{-1}{(-1)^\tau h^{(n)}_\tau \dot{\Delta}(\lambda_n)} \begin{vmatrix} u_n(x) & \phi_\tau(x, \lambda_n) & 0 \\ 0 & A_{1,\tau}(\lambda_n) & \delta_{3-i,1} \\ 0 & A_{2,\tau}(\lambda_n) & \delta_{3-i,2} \end{vmatrix}.$$

The further multiplication of this on the left by the determinant

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \delta_{1,\sigma} & \delta_{2,\sigma} \\ 0 & \mu_2^{(n)} & \mu_1^{(n)} \end{vmatrix},$$

and the appropriate subsequent division gives it the form

$$\frac{1}{(-1)^{\sigma+\tau}h_\tau^{(n)}\mu_\sigma^{(n)}\dot{\Delta}(\lambda_n)}\begin{vmatrix} u_n(x) & \phi_\tau(x,\lambda_n) & 0 \\ 0 & A_{\sigma,\tau}(\lambda_n) & \delta_{3-i,\sigma} \\ 0 & 0 & \mu_i^{(n)} \end{vmatrix},$$

by virtue of the relations (15.14). The expansion of this reduces it, because of the equation (16.12), to the evaluation

$$\operatorname{res}_n E_i(x,\lambda) = \frac{u_n(x)\mu_i^{(n)}}{\Phi_{n,n}(\lambda_n)}, \qquad i = 1, 2, \tag{21.6}$$

and the substitution of these results into the equation (21.3), together with an application of the relations (15.16) and (15.15), leads to the conclusion that

$$\operatorname{res}_n G(x,s,\lambda) = \frac{u_n(x)v_n(s)}{\Phi_{n,n}(\lambda_n)}. \tag{21.7}$$

Finally with the formulas (21.6) and (21.7) at hand it is a simple matter to recognize that the value of

$$\operatorname{res}_n \left\{ \int_a^b q(s)G(x,s,\lambda)f(s)ds + E_1(x,\lambda)f_2 + E_2(x,\lambda)f_1 \right\}, \tag{21.8}$$

is precisely the term

$$\frac{I_n(f)u_n(x)}{\Phi_{n,n}(\lambda_n)},$$

of the series (17.6).

If λ_n is of the index 2 and appears in the array (14.7) as λ_m and λ_{m+1}, the relation (21.4) is more appropriately taken in the form

$$(\lambda-\lambda_n)E_i(x,\lambda) = \frac{-\begin{vmatrix} \phi_1(x,\lambda) & \phi_2(x,\lambda) & 0 \\ \dfrac{A_{1,1}(\lambda)}{\lambda-\lambda_n} & \dfrac{A_{1,2}(\lambda)}{\lambda-\lambda_n} & \delta_{3-i,1} \\ \dfrac{A_{2,1}(\lambda)}{\lambda-\lambda_n} & \dfrac{A_{2,2}(\lambda)}{\lambda-\lambda_n} & \delta_{3-i,2} \end{vmatrix}}{\begin{vmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ \dfrac{A_{1,1}(\lambda)}{\lambda-\lambda_n} & \dfrac{A_{1,2}(\lambda)}{\lambda-\lambda_n} & 0 \\ \dfrac{A_{2,1}(\lambda)}{\lambda-\lambda_n} & \dfrac{A_{2,2}(\lambda)}{\lambda-\lambda_n} & 0 \end{vmatrix}}.$$

Since in this instance each element $A_{i,j}(\lambda)$ vanishes at λ_n, it is seen that

$$\lim_{\lambda\to\lambda_n}\frac{A_{i,j}(\lambda)}{\lambda-\lambda_n}=\dot{A}_{i,j}(\lambda_n),$$

and hence that

$$\operatorname{res}_n E_i(x,\lambda)=\frac{-\begin{vmatrix}\phi_1(x,\lambda_n) & \phi_2(x,\lambda_n) & 0\\ \dot{A}_{1,1}(\lambda_n) & \dot{A}_{1,2}(\lambda_n) & \delta_{3-i,1}\\ \dot{A}_{2,1}(\lambda_n) & \dot{A}_{2,2}(\lambda_n) & \delta_{3-i,2}\end{vmatrix}}{\begin{vmatrix}0 & 0 & 1\\ \dot{A}_{1,1}(\lambda_n) & \dot{A}_{1,2}(\lambda_n) & 0\\ \dot{A}_{2,1}(\lambda_n) & \dot{A}_{2,2}(\lambda_n) & 0\end{vmatrix}}.$$

Let each one of the determinants in this ratio be multiplied on the right by

$$\begin{vmatrix}h_2^{(m)} & h_2^{(m+1)} & 0\\ h_1^{(m)} & h_1^{(m+1)} & 0\\ 0 & 0 & 1\end{vmatrix}.$$

Because of the relations (14.10) and (16.6) it then takes the form

$$\frac{-\begin{vmatrix}u_m(x) & u_{m+1}(x) & 0\\ \dot{A}_1(U_m,\lambda_n) & \dot{A}_1(U_{m+1},\lambda_n) & \delta_{3-i,1}\\ \dot{A}_2(U_m,\lambda_n) & \dot{A}_2(U_{m+1},\lambda_n) & \delta_{3-i,2}\end{vmatrix}}{\begin{vmatrix}0 & 0 & 1\\ \dot{A}_1(U_m,\lambda_n) & \dot{A}_1(U_{m+1},\lambda_n) & 0\\ \dot{A}_2(U_m,\lambda_n) & \dot{A}_2(U_{m+1},\lambda_n) & 0\end{vmatrix}},$$

and if this is again modified by multiplying each of the determinants on the left by the factor

$$\begin{vmatrix}1 & 0 & 0\\ 0 & \mu_2^{(m+1)} & \mu_1^{(m+1)}\\ 0 & \mu_2^{(m)} & \mu_1^{(m)}\end{vmatrix},$$

the result, as a consequence of the relations (16.9) and (16.13), is

$$\frac{-\begin{vmatrix}u_m(x) & u_{m+1}(x) & 0\\ 0 & \Phi_{m+1,m+1}(\lambda_n) & \mu_i^{(m+1)}\\ \Phi_{m,m}(\lambda_n) & 0 & \mu_i^{(m)}\end{vmatrix}}{\begin{vmatrix}0 & 0 & 1\\ 0 & \Phi_{m+1,m+1}(\lambda_n) & 0\\ \Phi_{m,m}(\lambda_n) & 0 & 0\end{vmatrix}}.$$

Upon expansion this yields the formula

$$\text{(21.9)} \qquad \operatorname{res}_n E_i(x, \lambda) = \frac{u_m(x)\mu_i^{(m)}}{\Phi_{m,m}(\lambda_n)} + \frac{u_{m+1}(x)\mu_i^{(m+1)}}{\Phi_{m+1,m+1}(\lambda_n)}, \qquad i = 1, 2,$$

in accordance with which the relation (21.4) assumes the explicit form

$$\text{(21.10)} \qquad \operatorname{res}_n G(x, s, \lambda) = \frac{u_m(x)v_m(s)}{\Phi_{m,m}(\lambda_m)} + \frac{u_{m+1}(x)v_{m+1}(s)}{\Phi_{m+1,m+1}(\lambda_{m+1})}.$$

Thus when λ_n is of the index 2 the residue (21.8) is the sum

$$\frac{I_m(f)u_m(x)}{\Phi_{m,m}(\lambda_m)} + \frac{I_{m+1}(f)u_{m+1}(x)}{\Phi_{m+1,m+1}(\lambda_{m+1})},$$

of the pair of terms which appear in the series (17.6) in association with λ_n.

From these conclusions it may now be seen that if the points representing the characteristic values are plotted in the complex plane, and if the first $(N+1)$ of them taken in the order of increasing distance from the origin are enclosed by a curve C_N, the segment $S_N(x)$ of the series (17.6) that is made up of terms that are associated with these characteristic values is given by the formula

$$S_N(x) = \sum_{n=0}^{N} \operatorname{res}_n \left\{ \int_a^b q(s)G(x, s, \lambda)f(s)ds + E_1(x, \lambda)f_2 + E_2(x, \lambda)f_1 \right\}.$$

Such a sum of residues is, however, familiarly expressible as a contour integral with respect to λ over the curve C_N, namely as

$$\text{(21.11)} \quad S_N(x) = \frac{1}{2\pi i}\int_{C_N} \left\{ \int_a^b q(s)G(x, s, \lambda)f(s)ds + E_1(x, \lambda)f_2 + E_2(x, \lambda)f_1 \right\} d\lambda.$$

This is the formula in the general theory that stands in the place of the Fourier formula (12.8)

CHAPTER 22

The Fourier's series again. The formula (21.11) is useful, like its specialized counterpart (12.8), as the natural medium through which an investigation of the associated representations of arbitrary functions may be made. As the contour of integration C_N is successively taken to include more and more characteristic values the formula sums more and more terms of the series, and the approach of the integral to a limit reflects the convergence of the series. An identification of the function (if any) which the series represents thus becomes accessible through a study of the formula's integrand, more particularly through an analysis of the Green's function and the functions (21.2) when $|\lambda|$ is large.

The exposition of the complete analysis that would be requisite for the general case would at this point go well beyond the bounds which have been set for the scope of this discussion. The character of the functions $\phi_1(x, \lambda)$, $\phi_2(x, \lambda)$ as these depend upon λ would need to be determined. In general, however, no explicit formulas for these functions are available, since the differential equation (13.3) is not ordinarily solvable. The difficulties which this circumstance interposes will be manifest, although, to be sure, they are not insurmountable. So-called asymptotic forms for the solutions of an equation of the type (13.3) are deducible by well established methods, and these are entirely adequate to the requirements. This theory of asymptotic solutions, however, we do not propose to go into here. Without it, a restriction of the discussion to considerably narrower confines than have hitherto been observed is in the nature of things inevitable. We shall yield to the necessity by limiting the exposition henceforward to the basis of an outright, albeit a wholly typical, specialization. In fact, therefore, the further investigation is to take the form of an extended analysis of the example 3 of chapter 18. It will be recalled that the theory of the boundary problem basic to that example is none other than the theory of Fourier's series.

For the boundary problem (18.5), and with the choice of constants $f_1=0$, $f_2=0$, the special form of the formula (21.11) to which the attention is to be given is

$$S_N(x) = \frac{1}{2\pi i}\int_{C_N}\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} G(x, s, \lambda) f(s) ds d\lambda. \tag{22.1}$$

The functions $\phi_1(x, \lambda)$, $\phi_2(x, \lambda)$ may be chosen as those that are given by the relations (18.6), and these lead through the formulas (15.11) and (15.5) to the evaluations

$$A^{(a)}_{1,1}(\lambda) = \cos \rho\pi, \qquad A^{(a)}_{1,2}(\lambda) = -\frac{\sin \rho\pi}{\rho},$$

$$A^{(a)}_{2,1}(\lambda) = \rho \sin \rho\pi, \qquad A^{(a)}_{2,2}(\lambda) = \cos \rho\pi,$$

and

$$\psi_1(s, \lambda) \equiv -\frac{1}{\rho}\sin \rho s, \qquad \psi_2(s, \lambda) \equiv \cos \rho s.$$

The formula (20.5) is thus explicitly

$$g_2(x, s, \lambda) = -\begin{vmatrix} \cos \rho x & \frac{1}{\rho}\sin \rho x & 0 \\ 0 & -\frac{2}{\rho}\sin \rho\pi & -\frac{1}{\rho}\sin \rho(\pi + s) \\ 2\rho \sin \rho\pi & 0 & \cos \rho(\pi + s) \end{vmatrix},$$

and this with the relations (20.3) and (20.4) yields the form

$$(22.2)\quad G(x, s, \lambda) = \frac{\cos \rho(\pi + s - x)}{2\rho \sin \rho\pi} - \begin{cases} \dfrac{\sin \rho(x - s)}{\rho}, & \text{when } -\pi \leqq x \leqq s, \\ 0, & \text{when } s \leqq x \leqq \pi. \end{cases}$$

In the complex λ-plane the characteristic values are located at the points n^2, with $n=0, 1, 2, 3, \cdots$. The contour C_N, which must enclose precisely the first $(N+1)$ of these, may, therefore, be chosen as the circle centered at the origin and of the radius $(N+\frac{1}{2})^2$. In the ρ-plane the semi-circle Γ_N which is centered at $\rho=0$, which has the radius $(N+\frac{1}{2})$, and upon which $0 \leqq \arg \rho < \pi$, is an image of the circle C_N under the mapping defined by the relation (18.1). The formula (22.1) with its integration expressed in terms of ρ is, therefore,

$$(22.3)\quad S_N(x) = \frac{1}{\pi i}\int_{\Gamma_N}\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} \rho G(x, s, \lambda) f(s) ds d\rho.$$

When the point x at which the sum $S_N(x)$ is to be considered lies in the interior of the interval $(-\pi, \pi)$, it is advantageous to take the formula (22.2) in the equivalent form

$$(22.4)\quad G(x, s, \lambda) = \frac{-i}{2\rho} e^{|s-x|\rho i} + \frac{e^{\pi\rho i} \cos \rho(s - x)}{2\rho \sin \rho\pi},$$

the symbol $|s-x|$ standing as usual for $(s-x)$ or $(x-s)$ according as $x \leqq s$ or $x > s$. The formula (22.3) then assumes the form

$$(22.5)\quad S_N(x) = \frac{-1}{2\pi}\int_{\Gamma_N}\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} e^{|s-x|\rho i} f(s) ds d\rho + \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} \Psi(s, x, N) f(s) ds,$$

with the function $\Psi(s, x, N)$ defined by the formula

$$(22.6)\quad \Psi(s, x, N) = \frac{1}{2\pi i}\int_{\Gamma_N} \frac{e^{\pi\rho i} \cos \rho(s - x)}{\sin \rho\pi} d\rho.$$

Since this latter function is explicitly integrable as to s, it is found at once that for any choice of (α, β) as a sub-interval of the range $(-\pi, \pi)$

$$(22.7)\quad \begin{aligned} \int_{\alpha}^{\beta} \Psi(s, x, N) ds = {} & \frac{1}{2\pi i}\int_{\Gamma_N} \frac{e^{\pi\rho i} \sin \rho(\beta - x)}{\rho \sin \rho\pi} d\rho \\ & - \frac{1}{2\pi i}\int_{\Gamma_N} \frac{e^{\pi\rho i} \sin \rho(\alpha - x)}{\rho \sin \rho\pi} d\rho. \end{aligned}$$

The integrals which appear in this formula closely resemble that in the formula (22.6) since the sine and cosine functions are effectively similar in structure. The analysis of the one, which is to be set forth, will therefore be found obvi-

ously and readily adaptable to the others also. In the event that the point x is an end point of the interval $(-\pi, \pi)$ a somewhat different grouping of terms in the formulas (22.4) and (22.5) is advantageous. The analysis is, however, essentially similar to that which applies when $-\pi<x<\pi$, and that being so we shall content ourselves with the discussion of this latter case alone.

When it is expressed entirely in terms of exponentials the formula (22.6) may be made to appear in the form

$$\Psi(s, x, N) = \frac{-1}{2}\int_{\Gamma_N} \frac{e^{[2\pi+(s-x)]\rho i} + e^{[2\pi-(s-x)]\rho i}}{\pi(1 - e^{2\pi\rho i})}\, d\rho. \tag{22.8}$$

Even relatively crude appraisals of the functions which appear in the integrand of this yield some significant results. Under the resolution $\rho=\xi+i\eta$, with ξ and η real, the equation of the arc Γ_N is

$$\xi^2 + \eta^2 = (N + \tfrac{1}{2})^2, \qquad \eta \geqq 0,$$

and from this it is readily seen that each one of its points is either one for which

$$N + \tfrac{1}{4} \leqq |\xi| \leqq N + \tfrac{1}{2},$$

or else one for which

$$\eta > \tfrac{1}{4}\sqrt{3}.$$

At every point of the first one of these categories $\cos 2\pi\xi<0$, and the value $|1-e^{2\pi\rho i}|$ which is explicitly

$$\{1 - e^{-2\pi\eta}\cos 2\pi\xi + e^{-4\pi\eta}\}^{1/2}, \tag{22.9}$$

thus clearly exceeds 1. At any point of the second category the value (22.9) exceeds $(1-e^{-\pi\sqrt{3}/4})$, and is thus *ipso facto* greater than $1/\pi$. The relation

$$\pi\,|\,1 - e^{2\pi\rho i}\,| > 1, \tag{22.10}$$

thus maintains over the whole arc Γ_N.

Consider now the values

$$|\,e^{[2\pi\pm(s-x)]\rho i}\,|, \tag{22.11}$$

with s and x both upon the interval $(-\pi, \pi)$ and ρ still upon Γ_N. For all such s and x the relation

$$2\pi \pm (s - x) \geqq \pi - |\,x\,|,$$

is easily verified, and since the formula $\rho=(N+\frac{1}{2})e^{i\theta}$, in which θ stands for $\arg\rho$, shows that the real part of ρi is $-(N+\frac{1}{2})\sin\theta$, it is seen that the values (22.11) are both less than

$$e^{-[\pi-|x|](N+\frac{1}{2})\sin\theta}$$

Since this latter value is increased by the substitution of $\frac{1}{2}\theta$ for $\sin\theta$ when $0 \leqq \theta \leqq \pi/2$ and of $\frac{1}{2}(\pi-\theta)$, for $\sin\theta$ when $\pi/2 \leqq \theta \leqq \pi$, we may evidently draw from the formula (22.8) the relation

$$|\Psi(s, x, N)| < \int_0^{\pi/2} e^{-[\pi-|x|](N+\frac{1}{2})\frac{1}{2}\theta}(N+\tfrac{1}{2})d\theta + \int_{\pi/2}^{\pi} e^{-[\pi-|x|](N+\frac{1}{2})\frac{1}{2}(\pi-\theta)}(N+\tfrac{1}{2})d\theta.$$

By explicit integrations this reduces to the inequality

$$|\Psi(s, x, N)| < \frac{4}{\pi - |x|}. \tag{22.12}$$

The companion result

$$\left|\int_\alpha^\beta \Psi(s, x, N)ds\right| < \frac{8}{(\pi - |x|)(N+\frac{1}{2})}, \tag{22.13}$$

may be drawn by similar reasoning from the formula (22.7).

These conclusions are significant. In accordance with them the function $\Psi(s, x, N)$ is uniformly bounded as to s and N, and is such that its integral as to s converges to zero with $1/N$ uniformly as to the interval of integration. These properties, however, are precisely those which were invoked in chapter 12 as being sufficient to insure the relation (12.10) for an arbitrary integrable function $F(s)$. In the present instance, therefore, we may similarly conclude upon the basis of them that the final integral in the equation (22.5) converges to zero. Since the remaining integral in that equation may be evaluated thus

$$-\frac{1}{2\pi}\int_{\Gamma_N}\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} e^{|s-x|\rho i}f(s)ds d\rho = \frac{1}{\pi}\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} f(s)\frac{\sin(N+\frac{1}{2})(s-x)}{s-x}ds,$$

it is clear that the equation (22.5) implies for every integrable function $f(x)$ the relation

$$\lim_{N\to\infty}\left[S_N(x) - \frac{1}{\pi}\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} f(s)\frac{\sin(N+\frac{1}{2})(s-x)}{s-x}ds\right] = 0.$$

This is the relation (12.11) already familiar, and through it the reference of the sum $S_N(x)$ to the Dirichlet integral has evidently again been accomplished. The method of its accomplishment here, however, by contrast with that of chapter 12, is one of very general applicability. In particular it is one which in no way depends upon the special trigonometric combination formulas. With adaptations which essentially concern only details, this method is adequate to the analysis of the general series (17.6), namely to the representations of arbitrary functions in terms of the characteristic solutions of any properly constructed boundary problem [20].

REFERENCES

1. Van Vleck, E. B., The influence of Fourier's Series upon the development of Mathematics. Science, vol. 39, 1914, pp. 113–124.

2. Burkhardt, H., Entwicklungen nach oscillierenden Functionen und Integration der Differentialgleichungen der mathematischen Physik. Jahresbericht der Deutschen Mathematiker=Vereinigung. Leipzig. 1908, p. 25 and p. 3.

3. Burkhardt, H., *loc. cit.*, pp. 1–5.

4. Burkhardt, H., *loc. cit.*, p. 8.

5. Burkhardt, H., *loc. cit.*, pp. 10–13.

Cantor, M., Vorlesungen über Geschichte der Mathematik, vol. 3 (2nd ed.), Leipzig, p. 384 and pp. 900–902.

6. Riemann, B., Ueber die Darstellbarkeit einer Function durch eine trigonometrische Reihe. Gesammelte Werke, Leipzig, 1892, pp. 227–231.

Burkhardt, H., *loc. cit.*, pp. 14–24.

Van Vleck, E. B., *loc. cit.*, pp. 114, 115.

Gibson, G. A. On the History of the Fourier Series. Proceedings of the Edinburgh Mathematical Society, vol. XI, 1893, pp. 139–142.

7. Burkhardt, H., *loc. cit.*, pp. 29–31.

8. Burkhardt, H., *loc. cit.*, pp. 27–43.

Riemann, B., *loc. cit.*, pp. 233–234.

9. Burkhardt, H., *loc. cit.*, pp. 70–71.

10. Fourier, Joseph, The Analytical Theory of Heat (trans. by A. Freeman), Cambridge, 1878, pp. 104–115.

11. Fourier, *loc. cit.*, p. 168.

12. Fourier, *loc cit.*, p. 184.

13. Ford, L. R., Differential Equations, New York, 1933, p. 75.

14. Hobson, E. W., The Theory of Functions of a Real Variable, vol. II, 2nd ed. Cambridge, 1926, pp. 422, 423.

15. Hobson, *loc. cit.*, p. 482. Knopp, K. Theorie und Anwendungen der Unendlichen Reihen, Berlin, 1922, p. 337.

16. Ford, *loc. cit.*, pp. 66–68.

17. Ince, E. L., Ordinary Differential Equations, London, 1927, p. 73.

18. Langer, R. E. A Problem in Diffusion or in the Flow of Heat for a Solid in Contact with a Fluid. The Tôhoku Mathematical Journal, vol. 35, 1932, pp. 260–275.

19. A more detailed discussion of these problems, and references to the literature are to be found in the paper cited as reference [18].

20. The reference [18] includes a proof of the convergence of the representations of functions in terms of the solutions of the boundary problem (19.1). Both interior and end points of the interval are there considered.

APPENDICES

I. The solution of the system of equations

$$
\begin{aligned}
u_0 &= 0, \\
u_{k+1} + qu_k + u_{k-1} &= 0, \qquad k = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1), \\
u_n &= 0.
\end{aligned} \tag{I.1}
$$

If, in terms of unspecified constants α and β, a solution of the system is sought in the form

$$u_k = \alpha^k - \beta^k, \tag{I.2}$$

it is found upon substitution into the equations to be requisite that

$$\alpha^{k-1}[\alpha^2 + q\alpha + 1] - \beta^{k-1}[\beta^2 + q\beta + 1] = 0, \qquad k = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1). \tag{I.3}$$

These conditions are fulfilled if α and β are roots of the equation

$$x^2 + qx + 1 = 0,$$

namely if

$$\alpha + \beta = -q, \qquad \alpha\beta = 1. \tag{I.4}$$

Since β must thus be the reciprocal of α, whereas the form (I.2) must vanish when $k=n$, it is seen to be necessary that

$$\alpha^n - \alpha^{-n} = 0,$$

namely that

$$\alpha = e^{\nu\pi i/n}, \qquad \beta = e^{-\nu\pi i/n},$$

with an integral value of ν. For such an index ν the relations (I.4) and (I.2) show that q and u_k have the values

$$q_\nu = -(e^{\nu\pi i/n} + e^{-\nu\pi i/n}) = -2\cos\frac{\nu\pi}{n}, \tag{I.5}$$

and

$$u_{\nu,k} = (e^{k\nu\pi i/n} - e^{-k\nu\pi i/n}) = 2i\sin\frac{k\nu\pi}{n},$$

respectively. Since the system under consideration is homogeneous, any multiple of a solution is also such. Hence we may write

$$u_{\nu,k} = A_\nu \sin\frac{k\nu\pi}{n}, \qquad k = 0, 1, 2, \cdots, n, \tag{I.6}$$

with the coefficient A_ν arbitrary.

For the indices $\nu = 1, 2, \cdots, (n-1)$, the characteristic values of q, as given by the formula (I.5), are distinct. There can be no others, for by inspection the determinant of the system of equations is a polynomial of the degree $(n-1)$ in q.

II. A proof of the relation

$$\sin \nu\xi = \sin \xi \cdot p_{\nu-1}(\cos \xi), \tag{II.1}$$

with $p_{\nu-1}$ a polynomial of the degree $(\nu-1)$.

If in Demoivre's formula

$$(\cos \nu\xi + i \sin \nu\xi) = (\cos \xi + i \sin \xi)^{\nu},$$

the right-hand member is expanded by the binomial theorem, each resulting term that involves i to an odd power also involves $\sin \xi$ to such a power. Upon equating the pure imaginary components on the two sides of the equation it is thus found that

$$\sin \nu\xi = \sin \xi \cdot Q(\cos \xi, \sin^2 \xi),$$

each term of Q being of the degree $(\nu-1)$ in $\cos \xi$ and $\sin \xi$, and of even degree in $\sin \xi$. By the substitution of $(1-\cos^2\xi)$ for $\sin^2\xi$ the form (II.1) results.

III. A deduction of the identity

$$\cos^j x = \frac{1}{2^{j-1}} \sum_{\mu=0}^{[j/2]} \binom{j}{\mu} \cos (j - 2\mu)x. \tag{III.1}$$

If in the familiar equality

$$\cos x = \tfrac{1}{2}(e^{ix} + e^{-ix}), \tag{III.2}$$

each member is raised to the jth power and the one on the right is then expanded by the binomial theorem, the result is the relation

$$\cos^j x = \frac{1}{2^j} \sum_{\mu=0}^{j} \binom{j}{\mu} e^{(j-2\mu)ix}, \tag{III.3}$$

in which the symbol $\binom{j}{\mu}$ designates the coefficient of a^{μ} in the expansion of $(1+a)^j$. Since $\binom{j}{j-\mu} = \binom{j}{\mu}$, the formula (III.3) may be written alternatively as

$$\cos^j x = \frac{1}{2^j} \sum_{\mu=0}^{[j/2]} \binom{j}{\mu} \left\{ e^{(j-2\mu)ix} + e^{-(j-2\mu)ix} \right\},$$

with $[j/2]$ denoting the largest integer not exceeding $j/2$. By invoking the relation (III.2) again this may be given the form (III.1).

IV. A derivation of the evaluations

$$\text{(IV.1)} \qquad \sum_{\mu=1}^{n-1} \cos\frac{\mu s\pi}{n} = \begin{cases} n - \frac{1}{2}(1 + \cos s\pi), & \text{if } s \equiv 0 \pmod{2n}, \\ -\frac{1}{2}(1 + \cos s\pi), & \text{if } s \not\equiv 0 \pmod{2n}. \end{cases}$$

The first one of these evaluations is obvious. For when $s \equiv 0 \pmod{2n}$ each term in the sum on the left has the value 1 while the right-hand member is $(n-1)$. If $s \not\equiv 0 \pmod{2n}$ the relation

$$\cos\frac{\mu s\pi}{n} = \frac{1}{2}\left(e^{\mu s\pi i/n} + e^{-\mu s\pi i/n}\right)$$

leads at once to the equation

$$\sum_{\mu=1}^{n-1} \cos\frac{\mu s\pi}{n} = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{\mu=-n+1,\mu\neq 0}^{n-1} e^{\mu s\pi i/n},$$

or, as it may equally well be written, to

$$\text{(IV.2)} \qquad \sum_{\mu=1}^{n-1} \cos\frac{\mu s\pi}{n} = \frac{1}{2}\left[-1 + \sum_{\mu=-n+1}^{n-1} (e^{s\pi i/n})^{\mu}\right].$$

The sum in the right-hand member of this is a geometric progression. It is summed, therefore, by the formula

$$\sum_{\mu=-n+1}^{n-1} (e^{s\pi i/n})^{\mu} = \frac{(e^{s\pi i/n})^{-n+1} - (e^{s\pi i/n})^{n}}{1 - (e^{s\pi i/n})},$$

and since

$$(e^{s\pi i/n})^{\pm n} = (-1)^{s} = \cos s\pi,$$

its value reduces to $-\cos s\pi$. The formula (IV.2) thus takes on the form of the second evaluation (IV.1).

V. An evaluation of the determinant

$$\text{(V.1)} \qquad D(x) \equiv \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 2 & \cdots & (\nu-1) & x \\ 1^3 & 2^3 & \cdots & (\nu-1)^3 & x^3 \\ 1^5 & 2^5 & \cdots & (\nu-1)^5 & x^5 \\ \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots \\ 1^{2\nu-1} & 2^{2\nu-1} & \cdots & (\nu-1)^{2\nu-1} & x^{2\nu-1} \end{vmatrix}.$$

If in this determinant the elements of each row, beginning with the last one and extending in turn back to the second one, are modified by subtracting from them x^2 times the corresponding elements of the preceding row, the value of the determinant is unchanged. In its new form, however, all but the first ele-

ment in the last column are zeros, and hence, upon an expansion by the elements of this column, it is found that

$$D(x) = (-1)^{\nu-1}x \begin{vmatrix} 1(1^2 - x^2) & 2(2^2 - x^2) & \cdots & [\nu-1]([\nu-1]^2 - x^2) \\ 1^3(1^2 - x^2) & 2^3(2^2 - x^2) & \cdots & [\nu-1]^3([\nu-1]^2 - x^2) \\ \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots \\ 1^{2\nu-3}(1^2 - x^2) & 2^{2\nu-3}(2^2 - x^2) & \cdots & [\nu-1]^{2\nu-3}([\nu-1]^2 - x^2) \end{vmatrix}.$$

As it now stands, the factor (n^2-x^2) is common to the elements of the nth column for $n=1, 2, \cdots, (\nu-1)$. Upon factoring these from the determinant the evaluation

$$D(x) = (-1)^{\nu-1}x\left[\prod_{n=1}^{\nu-1}(n^2 - x^2)\right]D_{\nu,\nu}, \tag{V.2}$$

is obtained, $D_{\nu,\nu}$ designating the cofactor of the element in the νth row and νth column of the original form of $D(x)$.

VI. A formal deduction of the relation

$$\prod_{n=1}^{\infty}\left(1 - \frac{x^2}{n^2}\right) = \frac{\sin \pi x}{\pi x}. \tag{VI.1}$$

The roots of the equation $z^{2k}=1$ are obviously $z=\pm 1$ and $z=e^{\pm n\pi i/k}$, for $n=1, 2, \cdots, (k-1)$. The factorization

$$z^{2k} - 1 = (z^2 - 1)\prod_{n=1}^{k-1}\{(z - e^{n\pi i/k})(z - e^{-n\pi i/k})\},$$

is, therefore, proper. It is, however, clearly equivalent to

$$z^{2k} - 1 = (z^2 - 1)\prod_{n=1}^{k-1}\left(z^2 + 1 - 2z\cos\frac{n\pi}{k}\right),$$

a relation from which it follows that

$$\frac{z^k - z^{-k}}{2i} = \left(\frac{z - z^{-1}}{2i}\right)\prod_{n=1}^{k-1}\left(z + z^{-1} - 2\cos\frac{n\pi}{k}\right).$$

Now if in this the quantity $e^{i\pi x/k}$ is substituted for z, the equation becomes

$$\sin \pi x = \sin\frac{\pi x}{k}\prod_{n=1}^{k-1}\left[2\cos\frac{\pi x}{k} - 2\cos\frac{\pi n}{k}\right],$$

or, since

$$\cos\frac{\pi x}{k} - \cos\frac{\pi n}{k} = 2\left(\sin^2\frac{\pi n}{2k} - \sin^2\frac{\pi x}{2k}\right),$$

$$(\text{VI.2}) \quad \frac{\sin \pi x}{\pi x} = \frac{\sin\left(\frac{\pi x}{k}\right)}{\pi x} \left\{ 2^{2k-2} \prod_{n=1}^{k-1} \sin^2 \frac{\pi n}{2k} \right\} \prod_{n=1}^{k-1} \left\{ 1 - \left(\frac{\sin \frac{\pi x}{2k}}{\sin \frac{\pi n}{2k}} \right)^2 \right\}.$$

This is an identity. Its limiting form as $x \to 0$ must, therefore, maintain, namely

$$1 = \frac{1}{k} \left\{ 2^{2k-2} \prod_{n=1}^{k-1} \sin^2 \frac{\pi n}{2k} \right\},$$

an evaluation by virtue of which the relation (VI.2) may itself be reduced to the form

$$\frac{\sin \pi x}{\pi x} = \frac{\sin\left(\frac{\pi x}{k}\right)}{\left(\frac{\pi x}{k}\right)} \prod_{n=1}^{k-1} \left\{ 1 - \left(\frac{\sin \frac{\pi x}{2k}}{\sin \frac{\pi n}{2k}} \right)^2 \right\}.$$

This is valid for all k, and we may, therefore, permit this index to become infinite. The evaluation (VI.1) formally results.

VII. Establishment of the formula

$$(\text{VII.1}) \quad 1 + \sum_{\nu=1}^{n} 2 \cos \nu\theta = \frac{\sin\left[\frac{2n+1}{2}\theta\right]}{\sin\left[\frac{1}{2}\theta\right]}, \quad \text{for} \quad \theta \not\equiv 0 \pmod{2\pi}.$$

Upon substitution of the relations

$$2 \cos \nu\theta = e^{\nu\theta i} + e^{-\nu\theta i},$$

into the left-hand member of the formula (VII.1), this latter is found to be expressible as

$$\sum_{\nu=-n}^{n} e^{\nu\theta i}.$$

This is a geometric progression whose sum, if $\theta \not\equiv 0 \pmod{2\pi}$ is

$$\frac{e^{-n\theta i} - e^{(n+1)\theta i}}{1 - e^{\theta i}}.$$

If in this the numerator and the denominator are each divided by the factor $-2ie^{\theta i/2}$, the fraction assumes the form of the right-hand member of the formula (VII.1). This latter is, therefore, established.

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA

THE CARUS MONOGRAPHS

No. 1. *Calculus of Variations,* by PROFESSOR G. A. BLISS. (First Impression, 1925; Second Impression, 1927; Third Impression, 1935; Fourth Impression, 1944.)

No. 2. *Analytic Functions of a Complex Variable,* by PROFESSOR D. R. CURTISS. (First Impression, 1926; Second Impression, 1930; Third Impression, 1943.)

No. 3. *Mathematical Statistics,* by PROFESSOR H. L. RIETZ. (First Impression, 1927; Second Impression, 1929; Third Impression, 1936; Fourth Impression, 1943.)

No. 4. *Projective Geometry,* by PROFESSOR J. W. YOUNG. (First Impression, 1930; Second Impression, 1938.)

No. 5. *History of Mathematics in America before 1900,* by PROFESSORS DAVID EUGENE SMITH and JEKUTHIEL GINSBURG. (First Impression, 1934.)

No. 6. *Fourier Series and Orthogonal Polynomials,* by PROFESSOR DUNHAM JACKSON. (First Impression, 1941.)

No. 7. *Vectors and Matrices,* by PROFESSOR C. C. MACDUFFEE. (First Impression 1943.)

Price $1.25 per copy to members of the Mathematical Association, one copy to each member, when ordered directly through the office of the Secretary at McGraw Hall, Cornell University, Ithaca, N.Y.

Additional copies for members, and copies for non-members, may be purchased from the Open Court Publishing Co., La Salle, Illinois, at the regular price of $2.00 per copy.

New Edition

Outline of the History of Mathematics

by RAYMOND CLARE ARCHIBALD

Fifth edition, June 1941, ii, 76 pages

THIS thoroughly revised and considerably enlarged edition is published by the Mathematical Association to meet a constant demand for up-to-date information on the History of Mathematics, not available in any other single English work. The syllabus, twenty pages of references to other material and sources, and an entirely new Index of Names, provide an excellent basis for a teacher to conduct a semester or year course in this field, or for a student wishing greatly to extend his knowledge. Earlier editions of the Outline have been reviewed very favorably throughout the world. Our expectation is that this fifth edition published within ten years, and more fundamentally revised and extended than any other edition, will continue to meet a need in this country and elsewhere.

Price 75 cents a copy, postpaid, remittance with order

No discount in price to anyone

MATHEMATICAL ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA
McGRAW HALL, CORNELL UNIVERSITY
ITHACA, NEW YORK

GEORGE BANTA PUBLISHING COMPANY, MENASHA, WISCONSIN

UM

HNOLOGY DEPART...

PUBLIC LIBRARY
OCT 14 1947
DETROIT

THE AMERICAN MATHEMATICAL MONTHLY

THE OFFICIAL JOURNAL OF
THE MATHEMATICAL ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA, INC.

VOLUME 54 NUMBER 8

CONTENTS

A Distinguished Contributor to the Monthly . . . . . W. E. Byrne, E. P. Starke, N. A. Court 443
Concerning the Euler Line of a Triangle . . . Victor Thébault 447
A Navigation Computer . . . O. E. Brown and J. J. Nassau 453
The Jeep Problem: A More General Solution . . . C. G. Phipps 458
Mathematical Notes . . . . R. W. Hamming, N. C. Ankeny 462
Classroom Notes. C. I. Lubin, P. M. Hummel and C. L. Seebeck 465
Elementary Problems and Solutions 471
Advanced Problems and Solutions 479
Recent Publications 491
Clubs and Allied Activities 497
News and Notices 501
The Mathematical Association of America 509
March Meeting of the Southern California Section 509
April Meeting of the Ohio Section 511
Calendar of Future Meetings 514

OCTOBER 1947